



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>







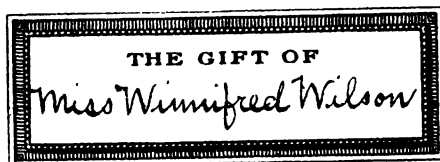
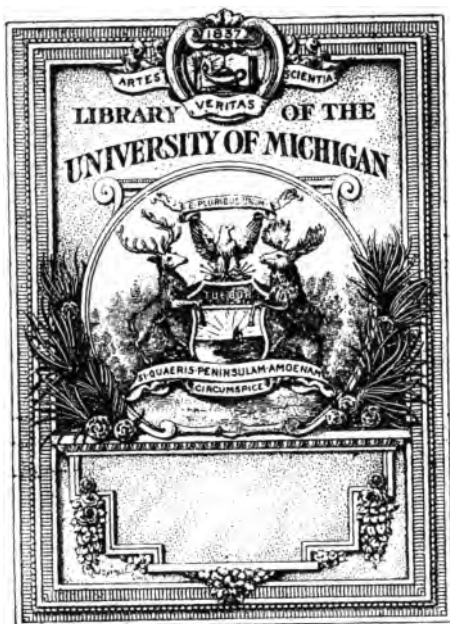








Grad  
850.5  
675  
Q8



grad  
32937210  
repa.  
1-10-00  
Repl.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

# ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

BY

C. H. GRANDGENT,

PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

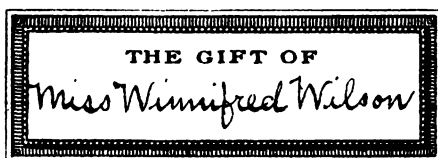
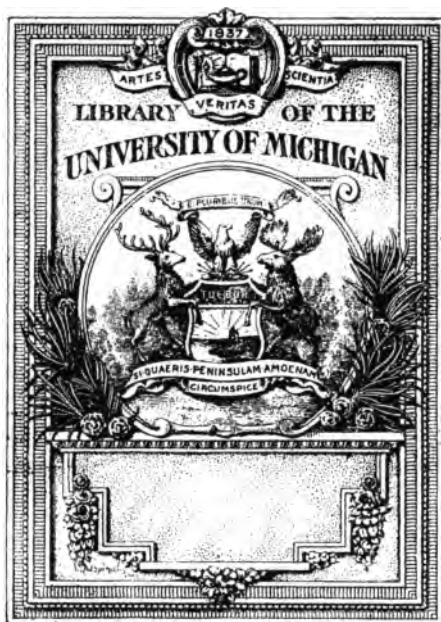
Revised and Enlarged

BOSTON, U.S.A.:

D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS.

1908

Grad  
850.5  
G75  
Q8



grad  
32937210  
ref-a  
1-0-00  
Heath

Heath's Modern Language Series.

# ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

BY

C. H. GRANDGENT,

PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

Revised and Enlarged

BOSTON, U.S.A.:

D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS.

1908

*Copyright, 1887 and 1904,*  
**By C. H. GRANDGENT.**

## PREFACE.

---

THIS volume is the result of an attempt to put into convenient form and the smallest possible compass all the grammar that the ordinary student of Italian will need. Short as the book is, it contains some paragraphs which beginners will probably skip: the longer lists of words and endings, and a great part of the chapters on suffixes and irregular verbs will be useful mainly for reference. The vocabularies cover the twenty-one exercises; they are not intended to include words explained in the notes, nor proper names that are exactly the same in Italian and in English.

I have endeavored to make the book represent the Italian language as it is spoken and written at the present day; the exercises are taken chiefly from reading-books lately prepared for Tuscan schools. Still, I have tried to give also as many obsolete forms as students of the Italian classics will require.

It has been my aim throughout to make the rules clear for all classes of pupils, even for those ignorant of other foreign languages, provided they understand the technical words commonly used in grammars. With this object in view, I have ascribed to the Italian vowels the pronunciation of the English ones that are most like them: an accurate description of the Italian sounds would, I fear, prove confusing to beginners who have had no training in phonetics. It will be easy for the instructor to explain not only

the vowels, but some of the consonants, and the division of words into syllables, much better than can be done in a book like this.

The authorities I have consulted most are the dictionaries of Fanfani, Rigutini and Fanfani, Fornari (*Nuovo Bazzarini*), and Tommaseo and Bellini. I have made but little use of other grammars; I am, however, indebted to Toscani for some ideas and a few of my examples. The chapters on syntax, and the treatment of irregular verbs, pronouns, suffixes, and the plural of words in *-co* and *-go* are almost entirely the result of original work.

In conclusion, I wish to express my gratitude to Professor Nash, of Harvard, to my friend and teacher, Sig. Filippo Orlando, of Florence, and to the gentlemen who assisted me in correcting the proof-sheets; and I wish above all to thank Professor Sheldon, of Harvard, and Professor Bendelari, of Yale, without whose aid and encouragement I should scarcely have ventured to offer this book to the public.

CAMBRIDGE, September, 1887.

#### NOTE TO THE REVISED EDITION.

To facilitate the use of this book with classes I have included in it a full set of Lessons and Exercises, the latter being taken in large part from my *Italian Composition*. The Italian texts at the end of the chapters, in the body of the *Grammar*, can be used to advantage at the outset of the course for practice in pronunciation and reading at sight. The English exercises in the body of the book should be reserved for reviews.

CAMBRIDGE, May, 1904.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
LESSONS AND EXERCISES .....	ix-xxxiv
PRONUNCIATION .....	1-7
ARTICLES .....	7-11
The Definite Article .....	7-10
The Indefinite Article .....	10
<i>Exercises 1, 2</i> .....	11
NOUNS .....	11-17
Gender .....	12-13
Number .....	13-16
<i>Exercises 3, 4</i> .....	16-17
ADJECTIVES .....	18-23
Gender and Number .....	18-20
Comparison.....	20-22
<i>Exercises 5, 6</i> .....	22-23
AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS .....	23-29
Augmentative and Diminutive Endings .....	23-25
Numerals.....	25-28
<i>Exercises 7, 8</i> .....	28-29
DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRO-	
NOUNS .....	30-35
Demonstrative Pronouns.....	30-31
Interrogative Pronouns .....	31
Relative Pronouns.....	31-33
Possessive Pronouns .....	33-34
<i>Exercises 9, 10</i> .....	35
PERSONAL PRONOUNS .....	36-46
Conjunctive Forms.....	36-40

	PAGE
Disjunctive Forms .....	40-42
Forms of Address .....	43-44
<i>Exercises 11, 12.</i> .....	44-46
AUXILIARY VERBS .....	47-55
Auxiliaries of Voice and Tense .....	47-53
<b>Essere</b> .....	47
<b>Avere</b> .....	48
Modal Auxiliaries .....	53-54
<i>Exercises 13, 14.</i> .....	54-55
REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS .....	55-65
The Regular Verb .....	56-59
First Conjugation .....	56-57
Second and Third Conjugations .....	57-58
Fourth Conjugation .....	58-59
The Irregular Verb .....	60-63
<b>Porre</b> .....	60-61
<i>Exercises 15, 16.</i> .....	63-65
MOODS AND TENSES .....	65-74
Infinitive and Participle .....	65-68
Past, Present, and Future .....	68-69
Conditional .....	69
Subjunctive .....	69-72
<i>Exercises 17, 18.</i> .....	72-74
CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS .....	74-84
Conjunctions .....	74-76
Prepositions .....	76-80
Adverbs .....	80-82
<i>Exercises 19, 20</i> .....	83-84
INDEFINITE PRONOUNS .....	84-87
<i>Exercise 21.</i> .....	87
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS ARRANGED ACCORDING TO CONJUGATION .....	88-100
First Conjugation .....	89-90
Second Conjugation .....	90-93

**CONTENTS.**

vii

	<b>PAGE</b>
<b>Third Conjugation</b> .....	<b>93-98</b>
<b>Present Regular</b> .....	<b>93-96</b>
<b>Present Irregular</b> .....	<b>96-98</b>
<b>Fourth Conjugation</b> .....	<b>99-100</b>
<b>Present Regular</b> .....	<b>99</b>
<b>Present Irregular</b> .....	<b>99-100</b>
<b>ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS</b> .....	<b>101-105</b>
<b>ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY</b> .....	<b>107-114</b>
<b>ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY</b> .....	<b>115-121</b>
<b>APPENDIX</b> .....	<b>123-127</b>
<b>Additional Notes on Pronunciation</b> .....	<b>123-125</b>
<b>Inflections of the Voice</b> .....	<b>126-127</b>
<b>INDEX</b> .....	<b>129-132</b>



## LESSONS AND EXERCISES.

NOTE. — The following forty-one lessons furnish, in the form of references to the body of the *Grammar*, a course of study in the rudiments of Italian. The numbers refer to *paragraphs*: they include all *subdivisions in the same type*, all *examples*, and all *paradigms*, belonging to them; but they do not comprise subdivisions in finer print unless these are expressly mentioned. The exercise following each lesson is to be used in connection with it; the exercises in the body of the book are reserved for review work.

### LESSON 1.

Pronunciation: 1; 2; 2, a; 3; 4, including the fine print except s, d; 5; 6; 7; 8. Pronounce all the examples several times.

#### EXERCISE I.

Pronounce this text: —

Quándo è frédde è invêrno. Néll' invêrno cåde la nêve, e  
*When it-is cold it-is winter. In-the winter falls the snow, and*  
 gli álberi sôno sênza fôglie e i giardíni non hánno fióri. Dôpo,  
*the trees are without leaves and the gardens have-no flowers. Later,*  
 l' ária comíncia a riscaldáre, nêlle campágne si védono l' êrbe  
*the air begins to grow-warm, in-the fields are-seen grass*  
 e i fióri, négli ôrti náscono i baccèlli, i pisèlli, pôi le ciliêge;  
*and flowers, in-the gardens come-forth string-beans, peas, then cherries;*  
 gli uccèlli cántano, non si patisce piú frédde, si sta veraménte  
*the birds sing, we-do-not-suffer any-more cold, we-are really*  
 bène, e allóra è primavêra. Finísce la primavêra, comíncia  
*comfortable, and then it-is spring. Ends the spring, begins*  
 il cáldo; il sóle brúcia; nêlla campáña si védono le spíge del  
*the heat; the sun burns; in-the country we-see the ears of*  
 gráno, ci sôno tante bèle frúttà, méle, pére, susíne, albicôcche,  
*corn, there are many fine fruits, apples, pears, plums, apricots,*  
 pêsche. Quêsto têmpo si chiáma estáte. Il cáldo va vía, e  
*peaches. This time is-called summer. The heat goes away, and*  
 ritórna l' ária cóme nêlla primavêra; le viti sôno cariche  
*becomes-again the air as in-the spring; the vines are laden*  
 d' úva, i fíchi comínciano a dárce i lôro dôlci frútti; ma a  
*with grapes, the fig-trees begin to give-us their sweet fruit; but*  
 pôco a pôco si rífa un pô' frédde, gli álberi pèrdono le fôglie,  
*little by little it-grows-again a little cold, the trees lose their leaves,*  
 il vènto sóffia assái; e quêsto têmpo si chiáma autúnno.  
*the wind blows hard; and this time is-called autumn.*

## LESSON 2.

Review Lesson 1.

## EXERCISE 2.

Pronounce this text : —

1. Vi parlerò di Vittòrio Alfieri, e ne ammirerete la forte  
*I shall speak to you of Victor Alfieri, and you will admire his strong*  
 e costante volontà. Egli era nato nel mille settecento quaranta-  
*and firm will. He was born in 1749*  
 nove di nobile famiglia piemontese<sup>1</sup>: era conte. Allora si  
*of a noble family of Piedmont: he was a count. Then people*  
 credeva che bastasse essere nobili per valere qualcosa; perciò  
*believed that it sufficed to be noble in order to be worth something; therefore*  
 i più dei nobili non istudiavano,<sup>2</sup> o studiavano<sup>2</sup> alla peggio, perchè  
*most of the nobles did not study, or studied carelessly, because*  
 tanto la nobiltà dava loro diritto alle cariche e agli onori, anche  
*their mere rank gave them a right to offices and to honors, even*  
 se erano ignoranti. L'Alfieri, da giovinetto, fu messo a studiare  
*if they were ignorant. Alfieri, as a lad, was put to study*  
 all' Accademia di Torino; ma egli dopo qualche anno ne uscì  
*at the Academy of Turin; but he after a few years came out*  
 senza saper<sup>3</sup> nulla di nulla, non ostante che avesse un bel-  
*without knowing anything at all, notwithstanding that he had a fine*  
 l'ingegno, perchè nè anche l'ingegno può valere senza lo studio.  
*mind, because not even talent can avail without study.*

Uscito pertanto dall' Accademia viaggiò per l'Italia, la  
*Having come out, then, from the Academy, he travelled through Italy,*  
 Francia e l'Inghilterra.  
*France, and England.*

2. Giunto all'età di ventisette anni, aprì, come si dice,  
*Having arrived at the age of 27 years, he opened, as people say,*  
 gli occhi, e s'accorse della sua ignoranza. Vittòrio si vergognò<sup>4</sup>  
*his eyes, and became aware of his ignorance. Victor was thoroughly*  
 altamente di sé stesso; sperò che studiando avrebbe potuto<sup>5</sup>  
*ashamed of himself; he hoped that by studying he might*  
 giovare all'onore d'Italia; e allora fece il generoso<sup>1</sup> proposito  
*add to the glory of Italy; and then he made the lofty resolve*  
 di mutar<sup>3</sup> vita: determinò di abbandonare gli usi e i costumi  
*to change his life: he determined to give up the habits and the customs*  
 della nobile gioventù dei suoi tempi, di lasciar<sup>3</sup> tutto per  
*of the noble youth of his times, to leave everything in order to*  
 istudiare.<sup>2</sup> A far<sup>3</sup> dei buoni propositi ci vuol<sup>6</sup> poco; il forte  
*study. To make good resolutions takes but little; the difficulty*  
 sta nel mantenerli. E non è mica un affar di nulla, quando una  
*lies in keeping them. And it is not at all an easy matter, when a*

persóna per lúngo córso di ánni ha contrátto cërte abitúdini  
*person through a-long course of years has formed certain habits*  
 e cërti costúmi, e si è avvezzáta a vivere in tal módo,  
*and certain customs, and has-accustomed-himself to living in such a-way,*  
 non è mica, dico, un affár di nùlla un bèl giòrno mutár víta,  
*it-is-not at-all, I-say, an easy-matter one fine day to-change one's-life,*  
 e diventár uòmo tútto affátto divèrso da quéllo di prima.  
*and become a-man entirely different from one's-former-self.*

3. Gràndi sfòrzi dovè fàre Vittòrio Alfìeri per mutár víta:  
*Great efforts Victor-Alfieri-had-to-make to change his-life:*  
 vi básti sapére che siccòme non si sentíva tánta fòrza d' ánimò  
*suffice-it-to-say that as he-did-not-feel so-much strength of mind*  
 da proseguíre<sup>7</sup> a studiàre, allorchè per le sùe abitúdini avrèbbe  
*as-to continue to study, when from-force-of-habit he-would-*  
 sentíto il desidèrio<sup>8</sup> d'uscí<sup>3</sup> di càsa e di andàre a divertírsi,  
*have-felt the desire of going-out and going to amuse-himself.*  
 l' Alfìeri si facéva dal servitóre legàre álla poltróna. È véro  
*Alfieri had-himself tied-by-his-servant to-his arm-chair. It-is true*  
 che a pòco a pòco la volontà prése<sup>9</sup> il di sópra: a pòco a  
*that little by little his will got the upper-hand: little by*  
 pòco, s' intènde, l' Alfìeri non ebbe più bisògno di ricórrere a  
*little, you-understand, Alfieri had-no-more need of resorting to*  
 quèsti mèzzi<sup>10</sup>; e ciò appúnto pròva quánto è véro che nùlla  
*this means; and this just proves how-true-it-is that nothing*  
 è diffícile a chi vuòle. Così<sup>8</sup> l' Alfìeri che si mise a studiàre  
*is hard to him-who wills. Thus Alfieri, who began to study*  
 a véntisette ánni, púre poté arrivàre ad èssere il piú brávo  
*at 27 years, was-yet-able to-come to be the best*  
 scrittóre di tragèdie dell' Itàlia; ed' è úna dèlle glòrie del  
*writer of tragedies in Italy; and he-is one of-the glories of*  
 nòstro paése.<sup>1</sup> Ma se quándò avéva fátto il proponíménto di  
*our country. But if, when he-had made the resolve to*  
 mutár víta e di studiàre, l' Alfìeri, conoscèndo quánti sfòrzi  
*change his-life and to study, Alfieri, knowing what efforts*  
 gli ci sarèbbero volúti<sup>6</sup> per manténere la promèssa, invèce di  
*it-would-require to keep his promise, instead of*  
 fàrsi legàre álla poltróna avèsse détto: *non mi rièsce*, nè  
*having-himself-tied-to-his arm-chair, had said "I-can't," neither*  
 ègli sarèbbe diventáto quell' uòmo sómmo che fu, nè  
*would-he-have-become that great-man that he-was, nor*  
 l' Itàlia potrèbbe óra vantàre un cosí<sup>8</sup> gran poèta.  
*could-Italy now boast-of such-a great poet.*

<sup>1</sup> See 4, §, c.    <sup>2</sup> The verb is *studidre*: in Italian a word beginning with  
 s plus another consonant, if it is immediately preceded by a word ending in a

consonant, prefixes *i* to the *s*; Italians are averse to a group of three consonants of which the middle one is *s*. <sup>3</sup> An infinitive often drops its final *e* in the interior of a phrase.

<sup>4</sup> The reflexive verb *vergognarsi* ('to shame one's self') means 'to be ashamed.'

<sup>5</sup> The compound conditional, in idiomatic Italian, is very often used in place of the simple conditional: *avrèbbe potuto gioindre* ('he might have helped') really means 'he might help'; so *ci sarèbbero voluti* ('there would have been required') means 'there would be needed.'

<sup>6</sup> *Ci vuole*, shortened here to *ci vuol*, means literally 'there requires' or 'there is needed.'

<sup>7</sup> See 4, **S**, *b*. <sup>8</sup> See 4, **S**, *a*. <sup>9</sup> **S** as in 'mason' (4, **S**, *d*).

<sup>10</sup> See 4, **Z**, *a*.

### LESSON 3.

The inflection of *essere*: 53, *a*.

#### EXERCISE 3.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. Where<sup>1</sup> are the birds? — 2. It was winter. — 3. We<sup>2</sup> are in the spring. — 4. The vines will be laden with grapes. — 5. Where<sup>1</sup> would you<sup>2</sup> be in the winter? — 6. You<sup>2</sup> are without flowers. — 7. Without the sun it would be cold. — 8. The flowers were in the fields. — 9. Where<sup>1</sup> were you<sup>2</sup> in the spring? — 10. I<sup>2</sup> was in the country.

<sup>1</sup> *Dove*.

<sup>2</sup> These personal pronouns need not be translated.

### LESSON 4.

The inflection of *avere*: 53, *b*.

#### EXERCISE 4.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. I<sup>1</sup> have no flowers. — 2. When will they<sup>1</sup> have leaves? — 3. He<sup>1</sup> had apples and pears. — 4. You<sup>1</sup> would have no leaves. — 5. The spring has no snow. — 6. Have you<sup>1</sup> the ears of

corn?—7. They<sup>1</sup> had no figs.—8. When will he<sup>1</sup> have the birds?—9. I<sup>1</sup> should have plums and peaches.—10. The trees had no leaves.

<sup>1</sup> These personal pronouns need not be translated.

### LESSON 5.

Articles and nouns : 9 ; 10, *a, b* ; 11 ; 12 ; 12, *a* ; 14, *a, b* ; 15 ; 17 ; 18 ; 19 (in general, nouns in *o* are masculine, nouns in *a* or *u* are feminine) ; 22 ; 23 ; 24 ; 25 ; 51, 2.

### EXERCISE 5.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. A corner.—2. Some corners.—3. Some rooms.—4. The corner of a room.—5. We are in the corner of the room.—6. A man in a room.—7. The man is in the room.—8. The men are in the rooms.—9. I have a gun.—10. You have the gun.—11. With the guns.—12. A city.—13. To the city and for the cities.—14. Some birds on a branch.—15. The birds are on the branches of the trees.—16. The roots of the trees in the wood.—17. The days of the month.—18. The months of a year.—19. The weeks of the year.—20. For the countries of the earth.—21. The prisons in the cities of the kings.—22. With the son of the uncle.<sup>1</sup>—23. The uncles<sup>1</sup> are with the fathers of the boys.—24. The poem<sup>2</sup> is written<sup>3</sup> by the boy's uncle.—25. The words are in the poem<sup>2</sup> written<sup>3</sup> by the two poets.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Zio*.    <sup>2</sup> *Poema*, m.    <sup>3</sup> *Scritto*.    <sup>4</sup> *Poeta*.

### LESSON 6.

*Êssere* and *avere* : 53, *a, b* ; 54 ; 76 ; 80, 1.

## EXERCISE 6.

[Based on the first paragraph of Exercise 2, p. x.]

1. He is a count. — 2. They are noble. — 3. You would be a count. — 4. We shall be noble. — 5. You have been ignorant. — 6. We shall have had the office.<sup>1</sup> — 7. They had had offices and honors. — 8. You are ignorant because you have not studied.<sup>2</sup> — 9. He had<sup>3</sup> the office<sup>1</sup> because he had been a count. — 10. People don't think<sup>4</sup> that he has<sup>5</sup> a great mind. — 11. He has had the office,<sup>1</sup> and therefore he has not studied.<sup>2</sup> — 12. You would have had the office,<sup>1</sup> if you had<sup>6</sup> studied.<sup>2</sup> — 13. People thought that he was<sup>6</sup> born in 1749. — 14. If we had<sup>6</sup> studied,<sup>2</sup> we should not be ignorant. — 15. If you were<sup>6</sup> ignorant, you would be put<sup>7</sup> to study. — 16. Even if we are ignorant, we shall have offices and honors, because we have been noble. — 17. Although they are<sup>5</sup> of noble family, they are not ignorant, because they have studied.<sup>2</sup> — 18. I was<sup>8</sup> noble, but I was<sup>8</sup> put to study, because, as a lad, I had<sup>8</sup> a great mind. — 19. Although we had<sup>6</sup> not travelled,<sup>9</sup> we should not have been ignorant, if we had<sup>6</sup> studied.<sup>2</sup> — 20. If you have travelled,<sup>9</sup> you will have offices and honors, although you have<sup>5</sup> not studied,<sup>2</sup> because you will not be ignorant.

<sup>1</sup> *La carica*. <sup>2</sup> *Studiato*. <sup>3</sup> Preterite. <sup>4</sup> *Non si crede* (see 86). <sup>5</sup> Pres. subj. <sup>6</sup> Imp. subj. <sup>7</sup> *Messi*, plural. <sup>8</sup> Imp. ind. <sup>9</sup> *Viaggiato*.

## LESSON 7.

Regular verbs of the first conjugation : 59 ; 59, a.

## EXERCISE 7.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. The birds sang in the spring. — 2. Let us begin to sing. — 3. In the winter the wind will blow hard. — 4. When will they

begin to give us their sweet fruit? — 5. The sun would burn the vines. — 6. When will you sing? — 7. The wind began to blow. — 8. I burn the ears of corn. — 9. I began to sing. — 10. Sing when the wind blows. — 11. I begin to speak. — 12. If <sup>1</sup> he sang, <sup>2</sup> I should not speak. — 13. If <sup>1</sup> they spoke, <sup>2</sup> we should begin to sing. — 14. Although <sup>3</sup> the wind blows <sup>4</sup> hard, we shall sing. — 15. Although <sup>3</sup> you sing, <sup>4</sup> we begin to speak.

<sup>1</sup> *Se.*    <sup>2</sup> *Imp. subj.*    <sup>3</sup> *Benchē.*    <sup>4</sup> *Pres. subj.*

### LESSON 8.

Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations : **60**  
(the list of verbs at the top of p. 58 need not be learned).

#### EXERCISE 8.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. The flowers fall in the winter. — 2. The trees lost their leaves. — 3. He sees the sun. — 4. Do you believe that <sup>1</sup> I see <sup>2</sup> the cherries? — 5. He did not believe that <sup>1</sup> the vines lost <sup>2</sup> their sweet fruit. — 6. I do not believe that <sup>1</sup> you fall. <sup>2</sup> — 7. See the trees : they have lost their leaves. — 8. We shall lose the flowers. — 9. When I see the birds, it is spring. — 10. Would you believe that he had <sup>3</sup> seen the trees without flowers? — 11. The peas will come forth <sup>4</sup> in the spring. — 12. They would not come forth <sup>4</sup> without the sun. — 13. When the snow goes away, we see the peas come forth <sup>4</sup> in the fields.

<sup>1</sup> *Che.*    <sup>2</sup> *Pres. subj.*    <sup>3</sup> *Imp. subj.*    <sup>4</sup> The infinitive is *ndscere*.

### LESSON 9.

Regular verbs of the fourth conjugation : **61.**

## EXERCISE 9.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. We felt the cold. — 2. Do you feel the wind? — 3. The winter and the spring will end. — 4. The birds would not feel the heat. — 5. The flowers suffer<sup>2</sup> when the wind blows. — 6. The birds suffered in the winter. — 7. I do not suffer any more heat. — 8. I do not believe that<sup>1</sup> he suffers.<sup>3</sup> — 9. Do you believe that<sup>1</sup> he feels<sup>3</sup> the cold? — 10. The summer and the autumn ended.

<sup>1</sup> *Che.*    <sup>2</sup> *Soffrire* is inflected in the pres. like *sentire*.    <sup>3</sup> Pres. subj.

## LESSON 10.

Adjectives and pronouns : 26 ; 27 ; 28 ; 29 ; 30 ; 31 ; 33 ; 43 ; 43, a ; 44 ; 45.

## EXERCISE 10.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. The poor are always unfortunate. — 2. The high trees are far from the great cities. — 3. The most beautiful plant has the smallest flower. — 4. The largest villa is mine, the smallest is his, and the lowest is theirs. — 5. Many good fathers are now poorer, but their boys and their girls<sup>1</sup> are always honest. — 6. Who were the good girls<sup>1</sup> who spoke to the unhappy sailor? — 7. Whose are the big clubs of which the little boy spoke? — 8. Which are the hard<sup>2</sup> lessons<sup>3</sup> that our poor boys finished in two days? — 9. What is the beautiful story<sup>4</sup> her little girls<sup>1</sup> believe? — 10. In what far part of your great city are the rooms of the honest merchant, to whom the largest ships of the world belong<sup>5</sup>?

<sup>1</sup> *Ragazza.*    <sup>2</sup> *Difficile.*    <sup>3</sup> *Lezione, f.*    <sup>4</sup> *Storia, f.*    <sup>5</sup> *Appartengono.*

## LESSON 11.

*Parlâre* and *crêdere* : 59 ; 59, a ; 60 (the list of verbs at the top of p. 58 need not be learned) ; 62 ; 77 ; 77, a ; 54, d.

## EXERCISE II.

[Based on the first two paragraphs of Exercise 2, p. x. *Viaggidre* is conjugated with *avêre*.]

1. I shall not leave Italy. — 2. They determined<sup>1</sup> to become noble. — 3. They would not leave France. — 4. He will be ashamed of himself. — 5. Let them leave<sup>2</sup> England. — 6. It is enough to abandon certain habits. — 7. He doesn't believe that Alfieri is ashamed<sup>2</sup> of himself. — 8. They did not believe<sup>3</sup> that we were studying.<sup>4</sup> — 9. We hoped<sup>3</sup> that they would travel through France. — 10. We do not believe that they are studying.<sup>2</sup> — 11. They speak to you of Victor, and you admire his strong will. — 12. I shall not believe that you have<sup>2</sup> changed your way of living. — 13. If we spoke<sup>4</sup> to you of Victor, you would admire his firm will. — 14. Do not believe that the customs of aristocratic youth increase<sup>2</sup> the glory of Italy. — 15. Study, and you will become an entirely different man from what you are. — 16. We abandoned<sup>1</sup> the habits of aristocratic youth, and travelled<sup>1</sup> through France and England. — 17. Let him not believe<sup>2</sup> that we admire<sup>2</sup> the customs of his times. — 18. They think that studying is enough<sup>2</sup> to change one's mode of life. — 19. If I believed<sup>4</sup> that studying was<sup>4</sup> enough, I should abandon the customs of youth. — 20. If I had<sup>4</sup> not travelled, I should not believe that most of the aristocrats leave<sup>2</sup> everything in order to study.

<sup>1</sup> Preterite.<sup>2</sup> Pres. subj.<sup>3</sup> Imp. ind.<sup>4</sup> Imp. subj.

## LESSON 12.

Regular verbs : 59 ; 59, a ; 60 ; 61 ; 62 ; 63 ; 72 ; 75 ; read 47.

## EXERCISE 12.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. We know Alfieri. — 2. They amuse themselves. — 3. Let them tie<sup>1</sup> themselves to the arm-chair. — 4. They will know the best writer in Italy. — 5. Feel a desire to make great efforts. — 6. They tied<sup>2</sup> themselves to the arm-chair. — 7. He knew<sup>3</sup> what efforts it would cost him. — 8. Changing one's way of living isn't enough. — 9. It wasn't enough<sup>4</sup> for you to go on studying. — 10. When he studies, he doesn't feel a desire to amuse himself.<sup>4</sup> — 11. By<sup>5</sup> studying you will come to be one of the glories of our country. — 12. If he tied<sup>6</sup> himself to the arm-chair, he would feel a desire to study. — 13. As he no longer needs to resort to this means, let him amuse<sup>1</sup> himself. — 14. As he didn't amuse<sup>3</sup> himself, he felt<sup>2</sup> a desire to go out of doors. — 15. If you knew<sup>6</sup> Alfieri, you would feel a desire to change your mode of life. — 16. If he felt<sup>6</sup> strong-minded enough to study, he would become the greatest writer in Italy. — 17. Change your way of living, and you will feel a desire to become a great poet. — 18. It isn't true that he knows<sup>1</sup> what efforts it will cost him. — 19. If we had<sup>6</sup> not felt a desire to go out of doors, we should not know such a great poet. — 20. By<sup>6</sup> amusing himself,<sup>4</sup> he will come, little by little, to need to make great efforts.

<sup>1</sup> Pres. subj.    <sup>2</sup> Pret.    <sup>3</sup> Imp. ind.    <sup>4</sup> Add *si* to the end of the verb.  
<sup>5</sup> Omit.    <sup>6</sup> Imp. subj.

## LESSON 13.

Review Lesson 1.

## EXERCISE 13.

Pronounce Exercise 2. Inflect the future of *ammirare*, the conditional of *studiare*, the present indicative of *viaggiare*, the preterite of *vergognare*, the imperfect indicative of *sperare*, the imperfect subjunctive of *giovare*, the imperative of *mutare*, the pre-

sent subjunctive of *determindre* (*determini*, etc.), the future of *abbandondre*, the conditional of *lasciandre*, the present indicative of *legdre*, the preterite of *proseguire*.

## LESSON 14.

Conjunctive personal pronouns : **46 ; 47 ; 48** (study this paragraph with the greatest care), with footnotes ; **48, a, b, c ; 49 ; 50 ; 86.**

## EXERCISE 14.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. He will finish it. — 2. I speak to myself. — 3. You believe one another. — 4. The boys have the same clubs that belong<sup>1</sup> to us. — 5. Speak of it to them. — 6. We speak of them to him. — 7. Your poor father had a beautiful carriage: he sent<sup>2</sup> it to me. — 8. You have a large plant: give it to me. — 9. The Italian had some birds: he sent<sup>2</sup> them to you. — 10. I speak to him: he believes me. — 11. I begin to<sup>3</sup> speak to them. — 12. You have some parrots: give them to him. — 13. He had a bird: he sent<sup>2</sup> it to them. — 14. I have sent<sup>2</sup> it to her. — 15. You have some little birds: give me some.

<sup>1</sup> *Appartengono.*

<sup>2</sup> Use *mandare*.

<sup>3</sup> *A.*

## LESSON 15.

Irregular verbs ; *anddre* : **64 ; 65 ; 66 ; 66, b ; 67 ; 92 ; 92, a, b, c, d, f** (p. 87) ; **92, i ; 78, d.**

## EXERCISE 15.

Inflect the present indicative of *condurre* (*conducendo, conduco*), the present subjunctive of *dire* (*dicendo, dica*), the imperfect indicative of *fare* (*facendo*), the imperfect subjunctive of *muovere*

(*movendo*), the preterite of *piacere* (*piacqui*), the imperative of *scudiere* (*scotendo*), the future of *fare*, the conditional of *trarre*.

### LESSON 16.

Review Lesson 15.

#### EXERCISE 16.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. Keep on studying. — 2. We resorted<sup>1</sup> to this means. — 3. You went<sup>2</sup> out of doors. — 4. They were beginning<sup>1</sup> to study. — 5. Go and have yourself<sup>3</sup> tied to the arm-chair. — 6. Let them go and amuse themselves. — 7. You no longer resort to this means. — 8. Let us go and amuse ourselves.<sup>4</sup> — 9. We knew<sup>2</sup> what efforts would be necessary. — 10. We went<sup>2</sup> and tied ourselves<sup>4</sup> to the arm-chairs. — 11. When I go to study, I do not need to resort to these means. — 12. Alfieri went<sup>2</sup> and had himself tied to the arm-chair. — 13. By<sup>5</sup> going to study, we shall come to be great poets. — 14. When I felt<sup>1</sup> a desire to go out of doors, I used to go<sup>1</sup> and study. — 15. If our will got<sup>6</sup> the upper hand, we should go and study. — 16. If we went<sup>6</sup> and studied, we should not need to change our mode of life. — 17. When your will gets<sup>7</sup> the upper hand, you will go and study. — 18. If Alfieri had<sup>8</sup> gone to amuse himself, Italy would not now have so great a poet. — 19. When they go and study, they no longer need to have themselves tied to their arm-chairs. — 20. If they kept<sup>6</sup> their promise, they would not need to have themselves tied to the arm-chair.

<sup>1</sup> Imp. ind.    <sup>2</sup> Pret.    <sup>3</sup> *Vi*.    <sup>4</sup> *Ci*.    <sup>5</sup> Omit.    <sup>6</sup> Imp. subj.    <sup>7</sup> Future.  
<sup>8</sup> Imp. subj. of *essere*.

### LESSON 17.

Disjunctive personal pronouns : 51 ; 51, *b* ; 52 ; 73 ; 74 ; review Lesson 14.

## EXERCISE 17.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. He spoke of it to us, to you, and to them. — 2. They believe us. — 3. They speak of themselves, and we speak of ourselves. — 4. She has finished it. — 5. Who will speak with me? — 6. You are very good, Mr. B. — 7. I speak to you, little boy, and to him. — 8. He is the boy of whom I spoke. — 9. Madam,<sup>1</sup> you have been<sup>2</sup> very unfortunate. — 10. Little boys, you will be surprised. — 11. I begin, Mr. B., to believe your words. — 12. They have spoken of it to us and to you. — 13. Do not think of<sup>3</sup> them: think of<sup>3</sup> her. — 14. Will you speak of it to him or to me? — 15. Mr. B. and Mr. D., you are unfortunate: the great trees near your villa belong<sup>4</sup> to two merchants, and not to you.

<sup>1</sup> *Signora*.<sup>2</sup> Fem.<sup>3</sup> *A*.<sup>4</sup> *Appartengono*.

## LESSON 18.

The whole chapter on Personal Pronouns (pp. 36-44), except the Exercises at the end.

## EXERCISE 18.

[Based on the second paragraph of Exercise 2. In all sentences in which the second person is used, translate it in three ways.]

1. Open your eyes, and you will be thoroughly ashamed of yourselves. — 2. Do not open them; if<sup>1</sup> you opened<sup>2</sup> them, you would be ashamed. — 3. They have left us; do not abandon us. — 4. I have determined to accustom myself to live in such a way. — 5. By<sup>3</sup> accustoming yourself to study, you will become an entirely different man. — 6. I hope so<sup>4</sup>; I am ashamed to<sup>5</sup> live in such a way. — 7. They had accustomed themselves to leave everything. — 8. Are you ashamed to give up your habits? — 9. He says so<sup>4</sup> to me and to you; he has determined to give

them up. — 10. Does he say so <sup>4</sup> to you? — 11. He will leave it to us. — 12. She might leave them to me. — 13. He wishes to <sup>3</sup> keep them. — 14. It will not be at all an easy matter for <sup>6</sup> you. — 15. I should be ashamed of it.

<sup>1</sup> *Se.*    <sup>2</sup> *Imp. subj.*    <sup>3</sup> *Omit.*    <sup>4</sup> *'It.'*    <sup>5</sup> *Di.*    <sup>6</sup> *Per.*

### LESSON 19.

Irregular verbs of the first conjugation: **92**, 1, 2, 3, 4; read **79**, *b* (including 1, 2, 3, pp. 77 and 78).

### EXERCISE 19.

[Based on Exercise 2.]

1. Let us give them the offices. — 2. We have made good resolutions. — 3. They had not given the office to Alfieri. — 4. I don't go and study: I am <sup>1</sup> talking. — 5. We shall be <sup>1</sup> admiring Alfieri's tragedies. — 6. If I made <sup>2</sup> good resolutions, I should go and study. — 7. I don't think that the difficulty lies <sup>3</sup> in making good resolutions. — 8. If he were <sup>1</sup> always <sup>4</sup> talking, he would not do anything.<sup>5</sup> — 9. Do everything, but don't go and live in such a way. — 10. We do not believe that rank gives <sup>3</sup> them a right to everything. — 11. By <sup>6</sup> giving them everything, he would be able to change his mode of life. — 12. You used to go <sup>7</sup> and study, and that gave <sup>7</sup> you <sup>8</sup> a right to the greatest honors. — 13. If you went <sup>2</sup> and amused yourself,<sup>8</sup> they would not give you <sup>8</sup> the office. — 14. They used to make <sup>7</sup> good resolutions, but the difficulty was <sup>7</sup> in keeping them. — 15. If we gave <sup>2</sup> them the office, the difficulty would be in making them study. — 16. By <sup>6</sup> resolving to abandon the customs of aristocratic youth, he would do himself <sup>9</sup> honor. — 17. When you make <sup>10</sup> a good <sup>11</sup> resolution, you will go and study; and then they will give you <sup>8</sup> everything. — 18. Let them resolve to study, and let them go to the Academy of Turin. — 19. Their rank gives them a right to offices, even if they do not resolve to change their way of living. — 20. He

did not resolve <sup>12</sup> to study, but went <sup>12</sup> and amused himself; and therefore they did not give <sup>12</sup> him offices nor honors.

<sup>1</sup> Use *stare*. <sup>2</sup> Imp. subj. <sup>3</sup> Pres. subj. <sup>4</sup> *Sempre*. <sup>5</sup> *Nulla*. <sup>6</sup> Omit.  
<sup>7</sup> Imp. ind. <sup>8</sup> *Vi*. <sup>9</sup> *Si*. <sup>10</sup> Future. <sup>11</sup> *Buon* (29, c). <sup>12</sup> Pret.

### LESSON 20.

The whole chapter on Articles (pp. 7-10), except the Exercises at the end.

### EXERCISE 20.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. I am a poet. — 2. Alfieri, a writer who began to study at twenty-seven, became a great poet. — 3. Habits bind us. — 4. Writers have to resort to this means. — 5. The mind makes an effort. — 6. Great efforts are hard. — 7. He goes to amuse himself with the poets. — 8. Knowing the habits of writers, I had him tied to his arm-chair. — 9. Mr. Alfieri studies in my arm-chair. — 10. Mr. Alfieri, you will go to Italy.

### LESSON 21.

Irregular verbs of the second conjugation: 92, 5-14; 57 (study the examples with particular care); 54, a. Note that *piacere* is intransitive: 'it pleases him' = *gli piace*.

### EXERCISE 21.

[Based on Exercise 1.]

1. He does not know when string beans come forth. — 2. The snow fell in the winter. — 3. The fig-trees ought to have given us their sweet fruit. — 4. They are sitting in the gardens. — 5. You will see them in the spring. — 6. The leaves would be lying in the fields. — 7. Do you like apricots <sup>1</sup>? — 8. Be silent! I do not like fruit. — 9. Birds are wont to sing in the spring. — 10. I ought to begin.

<sup>1</sup> 'Do apricots please you?'

## LESSON 22.

## Review Lesson 21.

## EXERCISE 22.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the  
*Grammar*.]

1. We have had<sup>1</sup> to keep still : we do not know his name. —
2. It fell<sup>2</sup> and lay<sup>2</sup> three days on the ground. — 3. He was sitting<sup>3</sup> in the room where his brother lay.<sup>3</sup> — 4. When I see<sup>4</sup> them, I shall have<sup>1</sup> to keep still, because I do not know their names. — 5. He saw<sup>2</sup> me, but I didn't suit<sup>2</sup> him. — 6. Do you know where he is sitting? — 7. They are lying under the table : don't you see them? — 8. If I saw<sup>6</sup> him, I should have<sup>1</sup> to speak to him. — 9. They will not know where we have seen them. — 10. See her : she doesn't know that we have<sup>6</sup> come back. — 11. Has she seen these plants? Do they suit her? — 12. He doesn't believe that I know<sup>7</sup> his name. — 13. Let us see where they are going. — 14. It lies there, where it has<sup>6</sup> fallen. — 15. When I saw<sup>2</sup> that they had<sup>6</sup> fallen, I was silent.<sup>2</sup> — 16. You saw<sup>2</sup> my coat : how<sup>8</sup> did it suit<sup>2</sup> you? — 17. If we had<sup>5</sup> seen them fall, we should know where they are. — 18. He didn't believe<sup>8</sup> that they were lying<sup>5</sup> on the table. — 19. They don't believe that you see<sup>7</sup> them. — 20. If they keep still, we shall not know where they have been.

<sup>1</sup> Use *dovere*.    <sup>2</sup> Pret.    <sup>3</sup> Imp. ind.    <sup>4</sup> Future.    <sup>5</sup> Imp. subj.  
<sup>6</sup> Use *essere*.    <sup>7</sup> Pres. subj.    <sup>8</sup> *Cóme*.

## LESSON 23.

Irregular verbs of the second conjugation: **92, 15-23; 57; 45, c.** *Dolere* takes an *indirect* object.

## EXERCISE 23.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. My eyes pain me ; I don't want to stay. — 2. We shall not be able to persuade him ; he doesn't want to keep still. — 3. If we were not able <sup>1</sup> to stay, it would grieve him very much.<sup>2</sup> — 4. They were in the habit <sup>3</sup> of staying <sup>4</sup> five days. — 5. If he were holding <sup>1</sup> it, he would let <sup>5</sup> it fall. — 6. They seem large, but they cannot be good. — 7. He wanted <sup>6</sup> to go, but he could <sup>6</sup> not : I held <sup>6</sup> him. — 8. You will not persuade me : I shall not be willing to do it. — 9. We saw <sup>6</sup> them : they are not worth anything.<sup>7</sup> — 10. If he doesn't want to stay, I'll hold him. — 11. He remained <sup>6</sup> three days, because his head pained <sup>8</sup> him. — 12. It grieved <sup>6</sup> me, but I had <sup>6</sup> to do it. — 13. I don't believe that it hurts <sup>8</sup> him very much.<sup>2</sup> — 14. If you wish it, they will stay with you. — 15. I have seen them this year ; they seemed <sup>6</sup> very little to me : I should have thought that they were not worth <sup>1</sup> anything.<sup>7</sup> — 16. You don't believe that he is willing <sup>8</sup> to stay. — 17. If you wanted <sup>1</sup> to stay, you wouldn't be able to sit down. — 18. If you don't believe that I can <sup>8</sup> keep still, don't remain here. — 19. He cannot stay : he has to go and study. — 20. Let them remain there, if they don't want to come back.

<sup>1</sup> Imp. subj.    <sup>2</sup> *Molto*.    <sup>3</sup> Imp. ind.    <sup>4</sup> 'Of staying' = '(to) stay.'  
<sup>5</sup> *Lasciare*.    <sup>6</sup> Pret.    <sup>7</sup> *Niente*.    <sup>8</sup> Pres. subj.

## LESSON 24.

Auxiliary verbs : 53, *a, b* ; 54 ; 54, *a, b, c, d, e* ; 55 ; 57 ; read the synopses in 56. Note that *andare* is conjugated with *essere*.

## EXERCISE 24.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the Grammar.]

1. I shall have finished the poem.<sup>1</sup> — 2. They had built<sup>2</sup> a city. — 3. We should have spoken.<sup>3</sup> — 4. He will have gone. — 5. You would have come.<sup>4</sup> — 6. The poor boys who have come<sup>4</sup> to the city have spoken of it to their mothers. — 7. We have finished our questions, but they have been very short. — 8. The villas which the boy's father has built<sup>2</sup> are the most beautiful in the world. — 9. The great<sup>5</sup> duke has gone to speak to the unhappy sailors who have come<sup>4</sup> to our city. — 10. If I had<sup>6</sup> come,<sup>4</sup> they would have sent me to the city. — 11. I do not believe that he has<sup>7</sup> come.<sup>4</sup> — 12. We should not have believed that you had<sup>6</sup> spoken of it to him. — 13. If I had<sup>6</sup> spoken of it, he would have sent it to me. — 14. If they had<sup>6</sup> sent it to her, she would have come<sup>4</sup> to speak of it to me. — 15. We believed that the largest prisons in the city had<sup>6</sup> been built<sup>2</sup> by an unhappy king, whose father was an Italian duke.

<sup>1</sup> See Ex. 5, note 2. <sup>2</sup> Use *costruire*. <sup>3</sup> Two translations. <sup>4</sup> *Venire*, p. p. *venuto*, aux. *essere*. <sup>5</sup> See 29, c. <sup>6</sup> Imp. subj. <sup>7</sup> Pres. subj.

## LESSON 25.

Regular verbs: 58; 58, a; 59; 59, a; 60; 61; 62; 63; read 77, d, f, g, h. *Sentire* means "to feel."

## EXERCISE 25.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the Grammar.]

1. The year ends with December. — 2. We speak of these things, but you don't believe us. — 3. I don't believe that the year ends<sup>1</sup> with December. — 4. Finish all the things that you have begun. — 5. He didn't believe<sup>2</sup> that we felt<sup>3</sup> the heat. — 6. You related<sup>4</sup> many things, but I didn't believe<sup>4</sup> them all. —

7. They feel the heat, but they don't observe the smoke. — 8. If he hastened,<sup>1</sup> they would flee. — 9. The water boils, but we don't feel the heat. — 10. What prevents us from<sup>2</sup> observing these objects? — 11. Let us hasten: they will eat<sup>3</sup> everything. — 12. If I repeated<sup>4</sup> these things, you would learn them. — 13. Let them believe everything: they will not prevent me from<sup>5</sup> thinking. — 14. You haven't learned those things: I repeat them to you. — 15. You don't believe that he repeats<sup>1</sup> everything. — 16. Observe them: they are hastening; where are they fleeing? — 17. I didn't finish<sup>4</sup> it: they prevented<sup>4</sup> me from<sup>6</sup> hastening. — 18. If he thought<sup>8</sup> that you were not observing<sup>8</sup> him, he would eat<sup>6</sup> everything. — 19. Learn everything, and repeat it to me in<sup>7</sup> two days. — 20. We shall study three years; by<sup>8</sup> studying we shall learn everything.

<sup>1</sup> Pres. subj.    <sup>2</sup> Imp. ind.    <sup>3</sup> Imp. subj.    <sup>4</sup> Pret.    <sup>5</sup> *Di*, with infin.  
<sup>6</sup> *Mangidre*.    <sup>7</sup> *Fra*.    <sup>8</sup> Omit.

### LESSON 26.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, 24-73 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses and all verbs marked *poetical* or *rare*); **69**; **70**; **91**, *a*.

### EXERCISE 26.

[Based on the first paragraph of Exercise 2. The forms of irregular verbs not yet learned may be found in the List, pp. 101 ff.]

If I should speak<sup>1</sup> to you of Victor, you would admire his strong, firm will. He was born<sup>2</sup> in 1749, of a noble family of Piedmont; he is a count. Nowadays<sup>3</sup> we don't believe that being noble is enough<sup>4</sup> to make us worth something; therefore most young men study, and are worth something, because they know that, if they are ignorant, their rank alone will not give them a right to offices and honors. But Victor, as a lad, studied carelessly; and, although he has<sup>4</sup> a fine mind, he is ignorant, and doesn't know anything at all. We sent him to the Academy

of Turin. But he didn't know that talent is of no use without study; and a few years later he came out without having studied nor even travelled, and without knowing that study is worth something. He didn't admire the Academy, and he didn't speak of it; he couldn't study, and he didn't know anything at all, because he thought it was enough<sup>5</sup> to have a fine mind. He was noble, but they didn't give<sup>2</sup> him offices nor honors, because he was ignorant.

<sup>1</sup> Imp. subj.    <sup>2</sup> Pret.    <sup>3</sup> *Oggid.*    <sup>4</sup> Pres. subj.    <sup>5</sup> Imp. subj.

### LESSON 27.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, 75-124 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses and all verbs marked *poetical* or *rare*); **87**; **88**; **89**.

### EXERCISE 27.

[Based on the second paragraph of Exercise 2. The forms of irregular verbs not yet learned may be found in the List. *Vivere* is conjugated with *avere*.]

He arrived at the age of twenty-seven, and then, one fine day, he opened his eyes. Now<sup>1</sup> he is thoroughly ashamed of himself, and hopes that by changing his mode of life he will be able to become an entirely different man from what he has been. He has perceived his ignorance, and has resolved to give up the habits that he has formed during a long course of years; he has determined to accustom himself to study. He says to himself: "It will not cost much to make good resolutions; the difficulty will be in keeping them. But I shall keep them—I shall accustom myself to living in an entirely different way from formerly—I shall leave everything in order to study. I resolve to change my mode of life. It will be no small matter, because I have lived hitherto<sup>2</sup> in an entirely different way; and when we live in such a way, we form<sup>3</sup> certain customs—but I shall not notice it: by studying and keeping my good resolutions I shall accustom myself to such a life. I will do it. I

should like to be a credit to Italy. I perceive my ignorance, and I am ashamed of myself."

<sup>1</sup> *Addo.*    <sup>2</sup> *Finóra.*    <sup>3</sup> See p. 97, no. 132.

### LESSON 28.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, 126-148 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses).

### EXERCISE 28.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

Victor knew that he would have to make great efforts, that it wasn't enough to feel a desire to study, and that he would have need of great strength of mind; but he said <sup>1</sup> to himself that little by little his will would get the upper hand, and that by continuing to study he would come to be a good writer. He understood and perceived what efforts it would cost him; but he resolved to change his mode of life, and he kept his promise. It is true that it cost him great efforts. He no longer went <sup>2</sup> out of doors. When he felt a desire to amuse himself instead of studying, he had to have himself tied to his arm-chair. But little by little he became a great poet, and came to have no more need of having himself tied. Then <sup>3</sup> he knew that he had got the upper hand, and said <sup>4</sup> to himself: "I shall not resort to this means any longer: I have no more need of it. I shall begin to study, I shall resolve to go on, and I shall keep my promise. I can and will do it. I have changed my way of living. It has been hard—I know what efforts it has cost me; but now <sup>5</sup> I shall not tie myself any more. I make promises and keep them: my will has got the upper hand."

<sup>1</sup> *Dicéva.*    <sup>2</sup> *Uscéva.*    <sup>3</sup> *Allóra.*    <sup>4</sup> *Dísse.*    <sup>5</sup> *Óra.*

### LESSON 29.

Personal pronouns: **46; 47; 47, a; 48; 48, a, b, c, d; 49; 50; 51; 51, a, b; 52; 55.**

## EXERCISE 29.

[Based on Exercise 1. Translate the second person in three ways.]

1. When will you begin to sing to us? — 2. Have you burned yourself? — 3. Seeing you in the garden, I called you. — 4. Finish it in the summer. — 5. Having finished them, you will give them to us. — 6. Do not give it to them. — 7. I should have given them to you. — 8. Give me your cherries. — 9. Have you any of these pears? — 10. Give her some. — 11. What is your name<sup>1</sup>? — 12. I could have given it to you. — 13. Is it necessary to give it to me? — 14. I should make him begin it. — 15. Give it to me. — 16. Sing it to them. — 17. Do not burn yourself. — 18. I am calling: is it you? — 19. I gave it to you and to him. — 20. Have you lost your apples? — 21. I ought to have called you. — 22. Let her see it. — 23. You can see me, but I cannot see you. — 24. He sees the birds, but they do not see him. — 25. Let me see some.

<sup>1</sup> 'How (*cóme*) do you call yourself?'

## LESSON 30.

Irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: 92, 149-161; 82; 84. *Morire* is conjugated with *essere*.

## EXERCISE 30.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. See Naples<sup>1</sup> and then die. — 2. They opened the window. — 3. Let them cover themselves and remain covered. — 4. We don't open the door; the wind has opened it. — 5. If I sew all<sup>2</sup> day, I shall die. — 6. They have built a great village. — 7. If they die, we shall bury them in the grove. — 8. I don't believe that you are dying.<sup>3</sup> — 9. What are they filling? They offer me water. — 10. The boy has died, and his parents are burying him. — 11. He will fill it, and then he will offer it to you. — 12. Our friends, who died last year, are buried in the wood. — 13. Do

you believe that he is building<sup>1</sup> a villa? — 14. If I suffered<sup>4</sup> as my parents have suffered, I should die. — 15. While they were building<sup>6</sup> the city, many men died. — 16. He suffered<sup>6</sup> always, because he didn't digest<sup>6</sup> the food. — 17. Offer him bread: perhaps he will digest it. — 18. We suffer — we are too unfortunate: let us die. — 19. I eat<sup>6</sup> this bread because you have offered it to me; but I don't digest it. — 20. If he dies, he will not be buried, but the birds will cover him with<sup>7</sup> leaves.

<sup>1</sup> *Népoli.*    <sup>2</sup> 'All the.'    <sup>3</sup> Pres. subj.    <sup>4</sup> Imp. subj.    <sup>5</sup> Imp. ind.  
<sup>6</sup> *Mangiare.*    <sup>7</sup> *Di.*

## LESSON 31.

Irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: 92, 162-168.

## EXERCISE 31.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. You tell it to me, but I don't hear you. — 2. I go out every day. — 3. Hear me: I shall tell you everything. — 4. We went up, but our friends didn't come. — 5. He tells me that they have<sup>1</sup> come. — 6. He opens the door, but he doesn't go out. — 7. I tell you that he will come. — 8. Thus speaking, I open the door and go out. — 9. They told him that you would come. — 10. He built himself a villa in the grove, and then he died. — 11. We told them that he had built a villa. — 12. We come, we go up, and we come out, but we don't disappear. — 13. We have told him that you are coming. — 14. I come here to see everything: they are building me a villa. — 15. If I told<sup>2</sup> you everything, you would die. — 16. You<sup>3</sup> have opened the door; but if you<sup>4</sup> go out, you<sup>4</sup> die. — 17. They come and disappear. Where do they go? Tell me, do they all die? — 18. I don't believe that they are going up.<sup>4</sup> Let them come, and they shall hear me. I shall say to them: "I came, I saw, I conquered."<sup>5</sup> — 19. He says that he will come; he comes; he disappears;

and we do not know where he has<sup>1</sup> gone. — 20. He came — I heard him open the door; he went up, and then he disappeared. I came out, but I did not see him: he had<sup>1</sup> died. We came here to find him, and we buried him in the wood.

<sup>1</sup> Use *essere*. <sup>2</sup> Imp. subj. <sup>3</sup> Second pers. sing. <sup>4</sup> Pres. subj. <sup>5</sup> *Vincere*, irreg. verb.

### LESSON 32.

The whole chapter on Auxiliary Verbs (pp. 47–54), except Exercise 13 at the end. See also 42.

### EXERCISE 32.

Translate Exercise 14 on p. 55.

### LESSON 33.

Regular verbs, and irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: 58; 58, *a*; 59; 59, *a, b*; 60; 61; 62; 63; 63, *a*; 92, 149–168.

### EXERCISE 33.

Translate Exercise 16 on pp. 64, 65.

### LESSON 34.

Irregular verbs of the first and second conjugations: 66, *a, b, c*; 68, *a, b*; 92, *a, b, c, d*; 92, 1–23.

### EXERCISE 34.

Inflect: the preterite of *fare*, *sapere*, *dovere*, *vedere*, *piacere*, *dolere*, *rimanere*, *tenere*, *valere*, *volere*, *parere*, *potere*, *persuadere*; the imperfect indicative and subjunctive of *fare*, *giacere*, *volere*; the imperative of *vedere*, *rimanere*, *tenere*.

### LESSON 35.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: 92, *e, f, g*; 92, 24–148.

**EXERCISE 35.**

Translate the first half of Exercise 18 on p. 73.

**LESSON 36.**

The whole chapter on Moods and Tenses (pp. 65-72).

**EXERCISE 36.**

Translate the second half of Exercise 18 on pp. 73, 74.

**LESSON 37.**

The whole chapter on Nouns and the whole chapter on Adjectives (pp. 11-22), except Exercise 6 at the end.

**EXERCISE 37.**

Translate Exercises 2 (p. 11) and 4 (p. 17).

**LESSON 38.**

The whole chapter on Demonstrative, Interrogative, Relative, and Possessive Pronouns (pp. 30-34); the whole chapter on Indefinite Pronouns (pp. 84-87), except the long list on p. 86 and the Exercise at the end.

**EXERCISE 38.**

Translate Exercises 6 (p. 23) and 10 (p. 35).

**LESSON 39.**

The whole chapter on Personal Pronouns (pp. 36-44), except Exercise 11 at the end.

**EXERCISE 39.**

Translate Exercise 12 on pp. 45, 46.

**LESSON 40.**

The whole chapter on Augmentatives, Diminutives, and Numerals (pp. 23-28), except Exercise 7 at the end.

**EXERCISE 40.**

Translate Exercise 8 on p. 29.

**LESSON 41.**

The whole chapter on Conjunctions, Prepositions, and Adverbs (pp. 74-82), except the two long lists and Exercise 19 at the end.

**EXERCISE 41.**

Translate Exercise 20 on p. 84.

# ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

---

## PRONUNCIATION.

1. The Italian alphabet has the same letters as the English, except that *k*, *w*, *x*, and *y* do not occur in modern Italian.

2. The Italians distinguish seven vowels: *a*, close *e*, open *e*, *i*, close *o*, open *o*, *u*; each of which always has the same sound, no matter what may be its position in the word, and never tends, as do the English long vowels, to become a diphthong. Italian vowels are all pronounced very quickly; hence there is but little difference in quantity between accented and unaccented sounds. English-speaking students must carefully avoid drawling the accented and slighting the unaccented syllables; they should try to give to every Italian vowel about the length of *i* in "bitter."

**A** is nearly like *a* in "father": as *fava*, *canna*, *cassa*, *palla*.

**E**, close, is nearly like *a* in "fate": as *beve*, *vere*, *stelle*, *messe*.

**E**, open, may be formed by trying to pronounce *e* in "bell" with the mouth very wide open: as *bella*, *amena*, *fera*, *pensa*.

**I** is nearly like *ee* in "feet": as *miri, vini, fissi, spilli*.

**O**, close, is nearly like *o* in "mope": as *dopo, dove, bollo, sotto*.

**O**, open, is nearly like *aw* in "saw" pronounced with the mouth wide open: as *no, odi, poi, donna*.

**U** is nearly like *oo* in "boot": as *una, cura, nulla, ruppi*.

*a.* The letters *i* and *u* are sometimes used to represent consonant sounds (see 4); but in formulating rules they are always counted as vowels.

**3.** As close and open vowels are not distinguished in spelling, some rules are necessary:—

(1) Unaccented *e* and *o* are always close: as *mare*, "sea"; *amo*, "I love."

(2) *E* and *o* are close in all monosyllables\* ending in a consonant: as *con*, "with"; *non*, "not"; *per*, "for."

(3) In monosyllables\* and oxytones† ending in a vowel, final *e* is close, final *o* is open: as *che*, "what"; *me*, "me"; *re*, "king"; *credè*, "he believed"; *perchè*, "why"; *do*, "I give"; *Po*, "Po"; *sarò*, "I shall be"; *andò*, "he went." Exceptions: final *e* is open in *è* = "is," *re* = "re," interjections (as *aimè*, "alas"; *chè*, "nonsense"), proper names (as *Noè*, "Noah"), and foreign words (as *caffè*, "coffee"); final *o* is close in *lo* and *o*.

(4) Accented *e* and *o* are always open in the groups *ie* and *uo*: as *piede*, "foot"; *fuoco*, "fire." *E* and *o* standing for *ie* and *uo* are open: as *ven* = *viene*, "he comes"; *cor* = *cuore*, "heart."

---

\* Not including shortened forms of words that regularly have more than one syllable.

† Words accented on the last syllable.

(5) In words that have always formed a part of the spoken language, accented *e* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ē* or *ĕ*, open when it represents Latin *ē* or *æ*; accented *o* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ō* or *ŭ*, open when it represents Latin *ō* or *au*. In book words accented *e* and *o* are usually open.

In all cases not covered by the first three rules, the quality of *e* and *o* will be marked in this book, an acute accent (´) denoting the close, a circumflex (^) the open sound: as *avére*, "to have"; *méno*, "less"; *tiêne*, "he holds"; *liêto*, "happy"; *poêta*, "poet"; *óra*, "hour"; *mólto*, "much"; *buôno*, "good"; *pôco*, "little"; *môto*, "motion."

4. **B, f, m, p, q, v** are pronounced as in English.

**C** before *e* or *i* sounds like *ch* in "chin"; elsewhere it is always like English *k*: as *cima*, "top"; *cóme*, "how"; *dólce*, "sweet." **G** before *e* or *i* sounds like *g* in "gem"; elsewhere it is always like *g* in "go": as *gatto*, "cat"; *gênte*, "people"; *spingi*, "push."

**A**. A *cc* or a *gg* before *e* or *i* has merely the sound of *ch* in "chin" or *g* in "gem" prolonged: as *facce*, "faces"; *légge*, "law."

**D, l, n, t** are pronounced further forward in the mouth than in English; the tip of the tongue should touch the back of the upper front teeth: as *alto*, "high"; *dato*, "given"; *luna*, "moon"; *nudo*, "naked"; *tuôno*, "thunder."

**H** is always silent: as *ahi*, "oh!" *ha*, "he has."

**I**, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *y*: as *iéri*, "yesterday"; *paio*, "pair"; *più*, "more." In the groups *cia*, *cio*, *ciu*, *gia*, *gio*, *giu*, an unaccented *i* serves only to show that the *c* or *g* is soft: as *faccia*,

"face"; *guancia*, "cheek"; *ciò*, "that"; *giù*, "down"; *mangia*, "eat"; *raggio*, "ray."

J is merely another way of writing *i*.

N before a *q* or a hard *c* or *g* has the sound of English *ng*: as *banca* (*bang-ka*), "bank"; *dunque* (*dung-kwe*), "therefore"; *lungo* (*lung-go*), "long."

R is always rolled, the point of the tongue vibrating against the teeth: as *caro*, "dear"; *rosso*, "red"; *per*, "for." When *r* is double or followed by a consonant, the trill is prolonged: as *carro*, "cart"; *burro*, "butter"; *marrone*, "chestnut"; *carne*, "meat"; *pôrta*, "door."

S is generally pronounced nearly like English *s* in "see," but with a somewhat sharper sound: as *sò*, "I know"; *spillo*, "pin."

Initial *s* before a sonant (*b, d, g, l, m, n, r, v*) has a sound intermediate between *s* and English *z*: as *sdrucchiare*, "to slip"; *slitta*, "sleigh."

A single *s* between vowels has, in most words, the sound of English *z*: as *caso*, "case"; *causa*, "cause"; *viso*, "face." But in the following cases it is pronounced like *s* in "see," "mason":—

a. In *annusare*, *ásino*, *casa*, *Chiusi*, *còsa*, *così*, *desidèrio*, *naso*, *parasito*, *pésò*, *Pisa*, *pisèllo*, *pòsa*, *ripòso*, *riso*, *susina*, and their derivatives, and in some uncommon words.

b. After the prefixes *de-*, *di-*,\* *pre-*, *pro-*, *re-*, *ri-*, *tra-*\*: as *desistere*, *disègno*, *presumere*, *proseguire*, *reservare*, *risolvere*, *trasudare*.

c. In the adjective ending *-óso* and the adjective and substantive ending *-ése*: as *noióso*, "troublesome"; *inglèse*, "English"; *mèse*, "month." But in *cortése*, *francése*, *lucchèse*, *marchése*, *paése*, *palèse*, the *s* is like English *z*.

---

\* Not to be confounded with *dis-*, *tras-*: *disonóre*, *trasandare*.

(*d*. In the preterites and past participles of *chiudere*, *chiudere*, *nascondere*, *porre*, *ridere*, *rimanere*, *rispondere*, *rodere*, and all verbs in *-endere*; and in their compounds and derivatives: as *chiuse*, *socchiuso*, *nascose*, *risposero*, *rascio*, *rimase*, *corrisposi*, *rosero*, *accesi*, *reso*, *scesa*. Exceptions to this rule are *deridere*, verbs in *-cludere*, and derivatives of *rodere*.)

**U**, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *w*: as *buono*, "good"; *guardare*, "to look"; *può*, "he can."

**Z** and **zz** are generally pronounced like a long and vigorous *ts*: as *alzare*, "to lift"; *azione*, "action"; *prezzo*, "price"; *zio*, "uncle."

In the following cases, however, *z* and *zz* sound like a prolonged *dz*:—

*a*. In *azzurro*, *dozzina*, *mezzo*, *pranzo*, *ribrezzo*, *romanzo*, *zelo*, and many less common words.

*b*. In verbs in *-izzare* (as *utilizzare*, "to utilize"); except *attizzare*, *dirizzare*, *guizzare*, *rizzare*, *stizzare*, and their compounds, and a few uncommon words.

**5**. The following combinations are to be noted:—

**Ch** (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *k*: as *fichi* (plural of *fico*, "fig"). **Sch** is like *sk*: as *schërzo*, "sport."

**Gh** (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *g* in "go": as *ghi* (plural of *ago*, "needle").

**Gl** (written *gl* if the following vowel be *i*) is nearly like English *lli* in "million": as *figlio*, "son"; *figli*, "sons." But in *Anglia*, *geroglifico*, *glicerina*, *negligere* and its derivatives, and a few uncommon words borrowed from the Greek or Latin, *gl* is like English *gl*.

**Gn** is nearly like *ni* in "onion": as *ogni*, "every."

**Qu** is always like *kw*: as *questo*, "this."

**Sc** before *e* and *i* is nearly like *sh* in "ship": as *uscire*, "to go out." Before all other letters it is pronounced *sk*: as *scuôla*, "school"; *schérno*, "contempt."

**6.** Every letter in Italian is distinctly and separately sounded; the only exceptions are *h*, silent *i* (see **4**), and the combinations mentioned in **5**. Ex.: *arte*, "art"; *firma*, "signature"; *furto*, "theft"; *giórno*, "day"; *vérso*, "toward"; *andái*, "I went"; *dura*, "breeze"; *bugie*, "lies"; *Eurôpa*, "Europe"; *mièi*, "my"; *pàura*, "fear"; *sentti*, "I felt"; *suôi*, "his."

Where a double consonant is written, both letters must be sounded, the first at the end of the preceding, the second at the beginning of the following syllable: as *anno*, "year"; *babbo*, "father"; *fatto*, "done"; *mésso*, "put"; *quéllo*, "that." For *rr*, *zz*, and soft *cc* and *gg*, see **4**.

*L*, *m*, *n*, and *r*, when preceded by an accented vowel and followed by another consonant, are prolonged: as *alto* (*all-to*), "high"; *sempre* (*sém-m-pre*), "always"; *tanto* (*tann-to*), "so much"; *parte* (*parr-te*), "part."

**7.** The accent is nearly always the same as in Latin. In this book it will always be noted. Of the signs written here, students need use only the grave (`), which is placed on the last syllable of oxytones and on some monosyllables; Italian writers do not agree as to the use of the other marks; some use the acute, and not the grave, on final *e*.

**8.** Italian words are divided in such a way that, if possible, every syllable shall begin with a consonant: as *ta-vo-lí-no*, "table"; *frat-tán-to*, "meanwhile"; *al-l' uô-mo*, "to the man"; *nar-rá-re*, "to relate"; *mêz-zo*, "half"; *các-cia*, "hunt"; *ôg-gi*, "to-day."

In the groups *s* + consonant, consonant + *r*, those mentioned in §, and *cl*, *fl*, *gl*, *pl*, both consonants belong to the following syllable. *I* = *y* and *u* = *w* go with the following vowel; *di*, *du*, *ei*, *eu*, *oi* are not separated. Ex.: *al-l' du-ra*, *a-vrò*, *bi-sò-gno*, *ca-stt-ghi*, *del-l' ac-qua*, *in-chiò-stro*, *mièi*, *mi-gliò-re*, *ri-flèt-te-re*, *te-à-tro*, *tubi*.

---

## ARTICLES.

9. The article is not declined, but it agrees with its substantive in gender and number.

### THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

#### 10. Masculine :—

*a.* Sing. *il*, pl. *i*, before a word beginning with any consonant except *s* impure\* and *z*.

*b.* Sing. *lo*, pl. *gli*, before a vowel or *s* impure or *z*.†

Before a vowel *lo* becomes *l'*; *gli* becomes *gl'* before *i*.

Ex.: *Il pàdre*, the father; *i pàdri*, the fathers.

*Lo stèsso pàdre*, the same father.

*Lo scidme*, the swarm; *gli scidmi*, the swarms.

*Lo zio*, the uncle; *gli zii*, the uncles.

*L' uòmo*, the man; *gl' insètti*, the insects.

#### 11. Feminine :—

Sing. *la*, pl. *le*.

Before a vowel *la* becomes *l'*; *le* becomes *l'* before *e*.

Ex.: *La mādre*, the mother; *le mādri*, the mothers.

*L' ora*, the hour; *le ore*, the hours; *l' èrbe*, the herbs.

---

\* That is, *s* followed by another consonant.

† *Li* is sometimes used for *gli*. Some writers use *il*, *i* before *z* and before *sce-* or *sci-*. In poetry *lo* is often used for *il*.

12. When the definite article is preceded by one of the prepositions *di, da, a, in, con, su, per*, the article and preposition are generally contracted into one word, as shown in the following table (*con, per* are often uncontracted) :—

*Partitive*

	IL	I	LO	GLI	LA	LE	L'
<i>Di</i> , of	<i>del</i>	<i>dî</i> or <i>dè</i>	<i>dello</i>	<i>dègli</i>	<i>della</i>	<i>delle</i>	<i>dell'</i>
<i>Da</i> , by	<i>dal</i>	<i>dâi</i> or <i>dà</i>	<i>dallo</i>	<i>dâgli</i>	<i>dalla</i>	<i>dalle</i>	<i>dall'</i>
<i>A</i> , to	<i>al</i>	<i>âi</i> or <i>a'</i>	<i>allo</i>	<i>âgli</i>	<i>alla</i>	<i>alle</i>	<i>all'</i>
<i>In</i> , in	<i>nel</i>	<i>nêi</i> or <i>ne'</i>	<i>nello</i>	<i>nêgli</i>	<i>nella</i>	<i>nelle</i>	<i>nell'</i>
<i>Con</i> , with	<i>col</i>	<i>côi</i> or <i>co'</i>	<i>collo</i>	<i>côgli</i>	<i>colla</i>	<i>colle</i>	<i>coll'</i>
<i>Su</i> , on	<i>sul</i>	<i>sûi</i> or <i>su'</i>	<i>sullo</i>	<i>sûgli</i>	<i>sulla</i>	<i>sulle</i>	<i>sull'</i>
<i>Per</i> , for	<i>pel</i>	<i>pêi</i> or <i>pe'</i>	<i>per lo</i>	<i>per gli</i>	<i>per la</i>	<i>per le</i>	<i>per l'</i>

Ex. : *Del pâtre*, of the father ; *dâi pādri*, by the fathers.

*Âllo spêcchio*, to the mirror ; *nêgli spêcchi*, in the mirrors.

*Côlla mādre*, with the mother ; *côlle mādri*, with the mothers.

*Sull' uōmo*, on the man ; *per gli uōmini*, for the men.

a. The word "some" is frequently rendered in Italian by *dî* with the definite article. This is called the partitive genitive.

Ex. : *Dâtemi del vîno*, give me some wine.

*Delle belle cose*, some fine things.

13. In the following cases the definite article is used in Italian, though not in English :—

a. Before the possessive pronouns : as *il nōstro giardîno*, "our garden" ; *i sùoi frattèlli*, "his brothers." When, however, the possessive qualifies an otherwise unmodified noun in the singular expressing relationship, the article is generally omitted : as *miā mādre*, "my mother." For a fuller statement see 45, a.

b. Before an abstract noun or one denoting a whole class, unless the sense is partitive.

Ex.: *L'uomo propone*, man proposes.

*I fiori nascono dal seme*, flowers spring from the seed.

*La morte è il peggiore dei mali*, death is the worst of evils.

c. Before a noun and adjective used either in a specific or in a general (but not in a partitive) sense.

Ex.: *L'anno scorso*, last year (*i. e.*, the last year).

*Il povero Luigi non viene*, (the) poor Lewis doesn't come.

*Gli uomini buoni*, good men (*i. e.*, all good men).

d. Before a title followed by a proper name: as *la regina Vittoria*, "Queen Victoria"; *il signor Bruni*, "Mr. Brown." It is not used, however, before *Don*, *Messèr*, and *Ser*.

e. Before family names; often before given names of women; occasionally before given names of well-known men.

Ex.: *Il Bianchi è morto*, White is dead; *la Patti canta*, Patti sings.

*Conosco l'Olivia*, I know Olivia; *Dante* or *il Dante*, Dante.

f. Before names of countries and continents: as *la Svizzera*, "Switzerland"; *all'Italia*, "to Italy"; *per l'Europa*, "for Europe." But the article is omitted after *in* in phrases that denote going to or dwelling in a country; and often after *di* or *in* when the preposition with the name of a country is equivalent to an adjective of nationality: as *vado in Germania*, "I go to Germany"; *rimango in Francia*, "I remain in France"; *la regina d'Inghilterra*, "the queen of England"; *il vino di Spagna*, "the wine of Spain"; *il teatro in Italia*, "the drama in Italy."

In all the above cases (beginning with 13, a) the article, unless it would be employed in English, is omitted when the noun is used as a vocative or is modified by a numeral or a pronominal adjective. It is often omitted in lists.

Ex.: *Questa sua opera*, this work of his.

*Signora Monti, come sta*, Mrs. Monti, how do you do?

*Italia, ti rivèdo*, Italy, I see thee again.

*Fede, speranza, carità*, faith, hope, and charity.

*Vieni, amico mio*, come, my friend.  
*Ha parecchi vizi*, he has several bad habits.  
*Due bellissimi cani*, two very fine dogs.

### THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

#### 14. Masculine :—

- a.* *Un* before a vowel or any consonant except *s* impure and *z*.  
*b.* *Uno* before *s* impure or *z*. \*

Ex. : *Un padre*, a father ; *un uomo*, a man.  
*Un anello*, a ring ; *uno specchio*, a mirror.  
*Uno sciame*, a swarm ; *uno zio*, an uncle.

#### 15. Feminine :—

*Una*, which becomes *un'* before a vowel.  
 Ex. : *Una madre*, a mother ; *un' ora*, an hour.

**16.** In the following cases the indefinite article, though expressed in English, is omitted in Italian :—

- a.* Before a predicate noun expressing occupation, rank, or nationality, and not accompanied by an adjective.

Ex. : *Egli è poeta*, he is a poet ; *sono marchese*, I am a marquis.  
*Siete italiano*, you are an Italian.

- b.* Generally before an antecedent (of a relative clause) used in apposition to a preceding noun modified by a definite article or a demonstrative pronoun.

Ex. : *L' Arno, fiume che traversa Firenze*, the Arno, a river which traverses Florence.

- c.* After *da* meaning "as," "like," or "for." See 79, *g*.

Ex. : *Da uomo*, like a man.

---

\* Some writers use *un* before *z* and before *sce-* or *sci-*.

## EXERCISE 1.

La parte più alta del nostro corpo è il capo. Il capo è attaccato  
 al collo, e il collo è attaccato al tronco. La parte davanti del  
 capo si chiama viso. Nel viso ci sono la fronte, gli occhi, il  
 naso, la bocca, il mento. Cogli occhi si vedono le cose. Col  
 naso si sentono gli odori. Colla bocca si mangia, si beve, si  
 respira. Respirare è mandare l'aria giù nel petto, e poi riman-  
 darla fuori. Noi respiriamo l'aria. Levate un pesce dall'acqua,  
 muore: levate l'aria a noi, e noi morremo.

*highest is is attached front is-called there are eyes we-see things we-smell odors we-eat we-drink we-breathe it We breathe Take it-dies take from us shall-die.*

## EXERCISE 2.

Mr. Rossi is a merchant. Leaving Italy, he-went-away last  
 year to France, a country which he-wished to-visit with his brother  
 and a friend of the family. But he-returned to Italy the same  
 month, saying: "Travelling<sup>1</sup> bores-me. Another time I-shall-make  
 a study of the customs of France. Paris is a big city; we-have-  
 seen some<sup>2</sup> fine things; but I-prefer the land of Garibaldi and  
 of King Victor Emmanuel."

*per volta visita tornò in dicendo viaggiare (m.) mi secca Un' altra farò costumi (m. pl.) grande vi abbiamo veduto belle cose (f. pl.) mi piace più*

<sup>1</sup> See 13, b.<sup>2</sup> See 12, a.

## NOUNS.

17. Italian nouns are not declined. Possession is denoted by the preposition *di*: as *lo specchio di mio padre*, "my father's looking-glass."

**GENDER.****18. There are no neuter nouns in Italian.\***

Nouns denoting males and females keep their natural gender: except *guida*, "guide"; *guardia*, "guard"; *persona*, "person"; *sentinella*, "sentinel"; *splà*, "spy"; *vedetta*, "scout"; which are feminine.

Ex.: *Il fratello*, the brother; *mia sorella*, my sister.

*Il poeta*, the poet; *la poetessa*, the poetess.

*Una spia*, a spy; *la nostra guida*, our guide.

**19. Of nouns denoting objects without sex some are masculine, some feminine. Their gender can often be determined by the final letter. All Italian nouns end in *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, or *u*: † —**

*a*. Those ending in *a* are feminine; except *colèra*, "cholera," *qualcosa*, "something," Greek neuters in *-ma*, ‡ many geographical names, and a few other words, mostly foreign.

Ex.: *Un' ora*, an hour; *un telegramma*, a telegram.

*Il Canada*, Canada; *il sofà*, the sofa.

*b*. Of those ending in *e* and *i* some are masculine, some feminine. All ending in *-zione*, *-gione*, or *-udine* are feminine.

Ex.: *Il fiume*, the river; *la pace*, peace.

*Un dì*, a day; *una metropoli*, a metropolis.

*La ragione*, the reason; *la servitùdine*, service.

*c*. Those ending in *o* are masculine; except *màno*, "hand."

Ex.: *Il ginocchio*, the knee; *la mano*, the hand.

\* Latin neuters become masculine in Italian; masculines and feminines retain their Latin gender. This rule has very few exceptions.

† A few foreign nouns used in Italian end in a consonant: as *lapis*, "pencil" (*i lapis*, "the pencils"). Nouns in *-o* or *-e* often drop that vowel if the preceding consonant is *l*, *n*, or *r*: as *canè* = *can*, "dog."

‡ Mostly scientific terms.

*d.* Those ending in *u* are feminine ; except *sopraffiù*, "surplus," and a few foreign words.

Ex. : *La virtù*, virtue ; *il bambù*, bamboo.

**20.** Any other part of speech (except an adjective\*) used as a noun must be masculine.

Ex. : *Il viaggiàre*, travelling.

**21.** Masculine names of trees in *o* or *e* have a feminine form in *a* or *e* respectively, denoting their fruit ; but *il dattero*, "date," *il fico*, "fig," *il limone*, "lemon," *il pomo*, "apple," are always the same, whether denoting the tree or the fruit.

Ex. : *Un sustno*, a plum-tree ; *una sustna*, a plum.

*Il nòce*, the walnut-tree ; *la nòce*, the walnut.

*Questi fichi*, these fig-trees, these figs.

## NUMBER.

**22.** Feminines in unaccented *a* form their plural by changing *a* into *e*.

Ex. : *La strada*, the street ; *le strade*, the streets.

*Una bugla*, a lie ; *le bugle*, lies.

*a.* Feminines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-che* and *-ghe* respectively (the *h* being inserted merely to indicate that the *c* and *g* keep their hard sound).

Ex. : *Un' oca*, a goose ; *mòlte oche*, many geese.

*La bottega*, the shop ; *parécchie botteghe*, several shops.

---

\* Adjectives of course have the gender of the nouns they represent.

*b.* Nouns in unaccented *-cia* and *-gia* form their plural in *-ce* and *-ge* respectively.\*

Ex. : *La guancia*, the cheek ; *le guance*, the cheeks.  
*Una ciliegia*, a cherry ; *tante ciliege*, so many cherries.

**23.** Masculines in unaccented *a* and all nouns in unaccented *o* and *e* (not *ie*) form their plural in *i*.†

Ex. : *Un poeta*, a poet ; *due poeti*, two poets.  
*Lo zio*, the uncle ; *gli zii*, the uncles.  
*La mano*, the hand ; *le mie mani*, my hands.  
*Un mese*, a month ; *tre mesi*, three months.  
*La cornice*, the frame ; *quattro cornici*, four frames.

*a.* Masculines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-chi* and *-ghi* respectively.

Ex. : *Il monarca*, the monarch ; *i monarchi*, the monarchs.  
*Il collega*, the colleague ; *i colleghi*, the colleagues.

*b.* Nouns in unaccented *-io* form their plural by changing *-io* to *-i* (often written *i*, *j*, or *ii*).

Ex. : *Lo specchio*, the mirror ; *gli specchi*, the mirrors.  
*Il ciliegio*, the cherry-tree ; *i ciliegi*, the cherry-trees.

*c.* Nouns in *-go* form their plural in *-ghi*. Nouns in *-co* form their plural in *-chi* if the penult is accented, otherwise in *-ci*.

Ex. : *Il castigo*, the punishment ; *i castighi*, the punishments.  
*Un catalogo*, a catalogue ; *due cataloghi*, two catalogues.  
*Il fico*, the fig ; *cinque fichi*, five figs.  
*Antico*, ancient ; *gli antichi*, the ancients.  
*Un medico*, a doctor ; *sei medici*, six doctors.

This rule has a number of exceptions. In the following lists, words whose irregular plural is rare are omitted.

---

\* *Provincia* has *province*. In general borrowed words and words whose plural is necessarily very rare keep the *i* : *audacia*, *audacie*.

† In old Italian and in poetry words in *-ello* and *-ale* often form their plural in *-egli* or *-ei*, *-agli* or *-ai* : *capello*, *capèi*.

(1) Compound nouns in *-logo* denoting persons engaged in the sciences, and all compound nouns in *-fago* form their plural in *-gi*.\*

Ex.: *Il fisiologo*, the physiologist; *i fisiologi*, physiologists.  
*Antropófago*, cannibal; *antropófagi*, cannibals.

(2) The following words form their plural in *-ci*, although the penult is accented: —

amíco      grêco      inimíco      nemíco      pôrco †

*Grêco* has a regular plural in the expression *vini grêchi*.

(3) The following words form their plural in *-chi*, although the penult is unaccented: —

ábbaco	fármaco	lástrico	rammárico	stráscico
acròstico	índaco	mánico	risico	tòssico
cárico †	intónaco	párroco	sciático	tráffico
diméntico ‡	intrínseco	pízzico	stômaco	válico §

*Acròstico* and *fármaco* have also regular plurals.

d. Some masculines in *o* have an irregular plural in *a*; this plural is feminine. They are: *centináio*, "hundred"; *migliáio*, "thousand"; *miǵlio*, "mile"; *páio*, "pair"; *uovo*, "egg."

Many masculines in *o* have this irregular feminine plural in *a* besides the regular masculine plural in *i*. The most common are: *bráccio*, "arm"; *dito*, "finger"; *frútto*, "fruit"; *gínocchio*, "knee"; *grído*, "shout"; *lábbro*, "lip"; *légno*, "wood"; *mèmbro*, "member"; *múro*, "wall"; *orécchio*, "ear"; *osso*, "bone."

\* Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *flemmagògo*, *idragògo*, *metallù'gc*, *dr̄go* (also reg. plur.), *sortilego*. "Magicians" = *mághi*, "magi" = *mági*.

† Likewise the rare words: *aprico*, *lombrico* (also reg.), *uvamico*, *vico*.

‡ Likewise its compounds.

§ Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *filáccico*, *mántaco* (also reg.), *stádtico*, *sfiláccico*, *stádtico* (noun), *úncico*.

**Ex. :** *Un páio*, a pair; *sette páia*, seven pairs.

*Il mto braccio*, my arm; *le tue braccia*, thy arms.

*Il lábbro*, the lip; *le lábbra* or *i lábbri*, the lips.

*Un osso*, a bone; *le ossa* or *gli ossi*, the bones.

*Braccio*, *ginocchio*, *lábbro*, and *orecchio* nearly always have the irregular plural when denoting the two arms, knees, lips, or ears belonging to the same body.

**24.** All monosyllables, and all nouns ending in *i*, *ie*, *u*, an accented vowel, or a consonant, are invariable.

**Ex. :** *Il re*, the king; *i re*, the kings.

*Il brindisi*, the toast; *i brindisi*, the toasts.

*Una spèce*, a kind; *otto spèce*, eight kinds.

*La virtù*, virtue; *le virtù*, the virtues.

*Una città*, a city; *dieci città*, ten cities.

**25.** The following nouns have irregular plurals: *búe*, "ox," pl. *buoi*; *díó*, "god," pl. *dèi*\*; *móglie*, "wife," pl. *mogli*; *uòmo*, "man," pl. *uòmini*.

### EXERCISE 3.

Gli uccèlli, le farfálle, i pésci, il cáne, il mício, le lucèrtole sòno<sup>1</sup> tútti animáli. Il gátto e il cáne sòno<sup>1</sup> animáli che hánno<sup>2</sup> quáttro gámbe, hánno<sup>3</sup> quáttro pièdi, e però si chiámáno<sup>4</sup> quadrúpedi. Il leóne è<sup>1</sup> il più bèllo e il più maestóso déi quadrúpedi. Gli uccèlli hánno<sup>2</sup> dúe zámpe; ed hánno<sup>3</sup> le áli e con le áli vólano.<sup>5</sup> Anche le farfálle hánno<sup>2</sup> le áli, anche le ápi hánno<sup>2</sup> le áli, e vólano.<sup>5</sup> Le mósche, le zanzáre, le vèspe, e pòi mólti áltri animálini, símili a quèsti, si chiámáno<sup>4</sup> insètti. Gli uccèlli e gl' insètti náscono<sup>6</sup> dálle uòva. Tútti quèsti animáli vívono<sup>7</sup> in mèzzo all' ária. I pésci vívono<sup>7</sup> in mèzzo all' ácqua. I pésci non hánno<sup>2</sup> gámbe; hánno<sup>3</sup> dálle párti quélle alettine; e con quèste píccole

---

\* The article used with *dèi* is *gli*: *gli dèi*.

alétte e con la còda nuòtano<sup>8</sup> e guízzan<sup>9</sup> via nell' áqua, lèsti lèsti còme un lámpo. Quélle alétte si chiámáno<sup>4</sup> pinne. Le lucértole stríscian<sup>11</sup> su' múri, hánno<sup>8</sup> délle zampíne, ma rasénti rasénti al còrpo, e quándo si muòvono<sup>10</sup> ánche súlla tèrra, strísciano.<sup>11</sup> Le sèrpi non hánno<sup>2</sup> gámbe; e quèsti animáli che non hánno<sup>2</sup> gámbe e che strísciano<sup>11</sup> sulla tèrra, còme le lucértole e le sèrpi, si chiáman<sup>4</sup> rèttili.

- <sup>1</sup> È = is; *sóno* = are. <sup>2</sup> Have. <sup>3</sup> They have. <sup>4</sup> *Si chidmano* = are called.  
<sup>5</sup> They fly. <sup>6</sup> Are born. <sup>7</sup> Live. <sup>8</sup> They swim. <sup>9</sup> Dart. <sup>10</sup> *Si muòvono*  
 = they move. <sup>11</sup> Crawl, they crawl.

EXERCISE 4.<sup>1</sup>

*omit.*

Mignonettes are<sup>2</sup> born from the seed. The seed, placed under ground, has<sup>3</sup> sprouted; from one side it-has<sup>3</sup> put-out<sup>4</sup> shoots, which have-spread-out<sup>5</sup> through<sup>6</sup> the ground, and from one side it-has<sup>3</sup> sent forth the stalk, the little-branches,<sup>7</sup> the leaves, and<sup>9</sup> the flowers. Like mignonettes,<sup>8</sup> many other<sup>26</sup> plants, herbs, and<sup>9</sup> flowers spring<sup>10</sup> from the seed. Flowers, herbs, grain, and trees are-called<sup>11</sup> vegetables. Vegetables have<sup>3</sup> roots, trunk, branches, twigs, leaves, flowers, and<sup>9</sup> fruit. Plants first produce<sup>12</sup> the flower and then the fruit. The trunk or stalk of plants is<sup>2</sup> that<sup>13</sup> which rests<sup>14</sup> on the roots and<sup>15</sup> comes<sup>16</sup> out from the ground;<sup>17</sup> it-is-covered<sup>18</sup> with<sup>19</sup> branches and with<sup>19</sup> leaves. Of the stalk of plants, — for instance, of the trunk of trees, — we-make-use<sup>20</sup> for many purposes; we-make<sup>21</sup> furniture, doors, windows, the beams that support<sup>22</sup> ceilings, ships, carriages, and<sup>9</sup> cars. The branches of trees are-burned,<sup>23</sup> and give-us<sup>24</sup> fire. Vegetables in-order-to<sup>25</sup> live have<sup>3</sup> need of earth, of water, and<sup>9</sup> of light.

- <sup>1</sup> See 13, *b*. <sup>2</sup> Is = *è*; are = *sóno*. <sup>3</sup> Has, it has = *ha*; have = *hanno*.  
<sup>4</sup> *Méso*. <sup>5</sup> *Si sóno distése*. <sup>6</sup> *Fra*. <sup>7</sup> *Ramicélli*. <sup>8</sup> Insert "and so."  
<sup>9</sup> Omit. <sup>10</sup> *Ndscono*. <sup>11</sup> *Si chidmano*. <sup>12</sup> *Fdnno*. <sup>13</sup> *Quéllo*. <sup>14</sup> *Pòsa*.  
<sup>15</sup> Insert "which." <sup>16</sup> *Viène*. <sup>17</sup> Insert "and." <sup>18</sup> *Si ricuòpre*. <sup>19</sup> *Di*.  
<sup>20</sup> *Ci servíamo*. <sup>21</sup> *Facciámo*. <sup>22</sup> *Réggono*. <sup>23</sup> *Si brúciano*. <sup>24</sup> *Ci dánno*. <sup>25</sup> *Per*. <sup>26</sup> Many other = *mólte áltre*.

## ADJECTIVES.

**26.** Adjectives agree with their substantives in gender and number. An adjective modifying two nouns of different genders is generally put in the masculine plural.

Ex.: *Il gatto è pulito*, the cat is neat; *stanze pulite*, neat rooms.  
*Una casa e un giardino bellini*, a pretty house and garden.

**27.** Numeral and pronominal adjectives, *bello*, *bravo*, *buono*, and the commonest adjectives of size and quantity, precede their nouns; adjectives of nationality, shape, and material follow. Adjectives whose use is prompted by emotion, and adjectives used in a figurative sense, generally precede. Otherwise, of the noun and adjective, the one that contains the chief idea comes last.

Ex.: *Troppo pane*, too much bread; *le grandi città*, great cities.  
*Questa palla rotonda*, this round ball; *due cani*, two dogs.  
*La buona madre*, the good mother; *pover' uomo*, poor man!  
*La vostra gentilissima lettera*, your kind letter.  
*È un uomo gentilissimo*, he is a kind man.

## GENDER AND NUMBER

**28.** Adjectives ending in *o* are masculine, and form their feminine in *a*. Adjectives in *e* are invariable in the singular.

Ex.: *Buono stivalotto*, good boot; *buona scarpa*, good shoe.  
*Ragazzo felice*, happy boy; *ragazza felice*, happy girl.

**29.** Adjectives form their plural in the same way as nouns (see **22**, **23**).

Ex.: *Six buoni cassettoni*, six good bureaus; *otto buone seggiole*, eight good chairs.  
*Due uomini felici*, two happy men; *tre donne felici*, three happy women.

- a. *Parécchi*, "several," has for its feminine *parécchie*.  
 b. *Qualche*, "some," is used only in the singular, even when the meaning is plural: as *qualche vólta*, "sometimes."  
 c. When preceding a noun, *bèllo*, "beautiful," has forms similar to those of the definite article; and *Sánto*, "Saint," and *gránde*, "great," have corresponding forms in the singular.\* *Buòno*, "good," when preceding its noun, has a singular similar to the indefinite article. The masculine of these words (which is the only irregular part) is, therefore, as follows: —

Before any consonant except *s* impure or *z*: *bel*, *San*, *gran*, *buon*;  
 pl. *bèi*, *Sánti*, *grándi*, *buòni*.

Before *s* impure or *z*: *bèllo*, *Sánto*, *gránde*, *buòno*; pl. *bègli*, *Sánti*, *grándi*, *buòni*.

Before a vowel: *bell'*, *San'*, *grand'*, *buon*; pl. *bègli*, *Sánti*, *grándi*, *buòni*.

When used *after* a noun or in the predicate these adjectives have their full forms (*bèllo*, *bèlli*, *Sánto*, *Sánti*, *gránde*, *grándi*, *buòno*, *buòni*).

Ex.: *Un bel quaddro*, a fine picture; *dúe bèi lètti*, two fine beds.

*Un bèllo scaffale*, a fine bookcase; *quáttro bègli stivdi*, four fine boots.

*Un bell' andito*, a fine hall; *mólti bègli orològi*, many fine clocks.

*Una bèlla stúfa*, a fine stove; *parécchie belle tènde*, several fine curtains.

*Il palázso è bello*, the palace is fine; *le sedie son belle*, the chairs are beautiful.

*San Pètro, Sánto Stéfano e San' Antònio*, St. Peter, St. Stephen, and St. Anthony.

*Un gran fubco*, a big fire; *grándi camini*, big fire-places.

---

\* *Gran* is, moreover, often used in the fem. sing. (for *gránde*), and sometimes in the plur. (for *grándi*); it is regularly used before fem. sing. nouns in *e*, and in the expression *una gran bèlla* (or *brútta*) *còsa*.

*Il grande scaldino*, the big foot-warmer; *dieci grandi spilli*, ten big pins.

*Un grande sciame*, a great swarm; *il grande zupolo*, the large bung.

*Un grand' armadio*, a big wardrobe; *venti grandi alberi*, twenty big trees.

*Una grande camera*, a large bedroom; *cinque grandi finestre*, five big windows.

*Il salotto è molto grande*, the parlor is very large.

*Un buon lume*, a good lamp; *buoni fiammiferi*, good matches.

*Il buono sgabello*, the good stool; *nove buoni scolari*, nine good pupils.

*Il buon olio*, the good oil; *parecchi buoni aghi*, several good needles.

*Una buona cucina*, a good kitchen; *le buone candele*, the good candles.

*Il bambino è buono*, the child is good.

**30.** Any adjective of either gender or either number may be used as a noun.

Ex.: *I buoni*, the good; *la bella*, the beautiful woman.

✓

### COMPARISON.

**31.** All Italian adjectives form their comparative by prefixing *più* "more," and their superlative by prefixing the definite article to the comparative. When the superlative immediately follows the noun, this article is omitted.

Ex.: *Bello*, beautiful; *più bello*, more beautiful; *il più bello*, the most beautiful.

*Lungo*, long; *più lungo*, longer; *il più lungo*, the longest.

*La via più corta*, the shortest way.

*a.* The following adjectives have an irregular comparison in addition to the regular one: —

*Alto*, high; *più alto* or *superiore*; *il più alto* or *il superiore*.

*Basso*, low; *più basso* or *inferiore*; *il più basso* or *l'inferiore*.

*Buono*, good; *più buono* or *migliore*; \* *il più buono* or *il migliore*.

*Cattivo*, bad; *più cattivo* or *peggiore*; \* *il più cattivo* or *il peggiore*.

*Grande*, big; *più grande* or *maggiore*; *il più grande* or *il maggiore*.

*Piccolo*, small; *più piccolo* or *minore*; *il più piccolo* or *il minore*.

"Higher" and "lower" are commonly rendered by *più alto* and *più basso*; *superiore* and *inferiore* generally mean "superior" and "inferior." *Migliore* and *peggiore* are more used than *più buono* and *più cattivo*, which have the same sense. "Larger" and "smaller" are generally *più grande* and *più piccolo*; *maggiore* and *minore* usually signify "older" and "younger."

Ex.: *Noi siamo migliori di loro*, we are better than they.

*Questa sala da pranzo è la più grande*, this dining-room is the biggest.

*Pietro è il fratello minore*, Peter is the youngest brother.

**32.** The adverb "less" is expressed by *méno*, "least" by *il méno*. "As . . . as," "so . . . as" are *tánto . . . quánto*, *tánto . . . cóme*, *così . . . cóme*, or simply *quánto*.

Ex.: *Quella stanza è la méno bellina*, that room is the least pretty.

*Paolo non è tanto buono come Roberto*, Paul isn't so good as Robert.

*Giovanni è alto quanto Filippo*, John is as tall as Philip.

**33.** "Than" is *che*.

Ex.: *L'albergo è più grande che bello*, the hotel is bigger than it is beautiful.

But before a noun, a pronoun, or a numeral "than" is rendered by the preposition *di* (see 12). If, however, this "than" is preceded by a word meaning "rather," it is translated *che*.

---

\* The adverbs "better" and "worse" are *méglio* and *peggio*.

Ex.: *Riccardo è peggiore di me*, Richard is worse than I.  
*Voi siete più ricchi di noi*, you are richer than we.  
*Meno di cinque*, less than five.  
*Piuttosto la morte che il disonore*, rather death than dishonor.

Before an inflected verb "than" is *che non* or *di quel che*.  
 If the verb has a negative subject, "than" is *che*.

Ex.: *Abbaia più che non morde*, he barks more than he bites.  
*Prometto meno di quel che do*, I promise less than I give.  
*Più lieto che nessun figlio lo era stato*, happier than any son  
 had been.

34. "The more . . . the more," "the less . . . the less"  
 are *più . . . più, meno . . . meno*. "More" and "less" after  
 a number are *di più, di meno*. In speaking of time,  
 "longer" after a negative is *più*.

Ex.: *Più studio, più imparo*, the more I study, the more I learn  
*Trent'giorni di meno*, thirty days less.  
*Non lo vediamo più*, we see him no longer.

#### EXERCISE 5.

Il sóle è<sup>1</sup> un glòbo grandissimo e sèmpre infocato: éssò è<sup>1</sup>  
 gránde óltre un milióne di vólte più délla tèrra; e díre<sup>2</sup> che  
 a' nòstri òcchi apparisce<sup>3</sup> tánto più piccólo! Ánche la lúna, che  
 splénde<sup>4</sup> duránte la nótte, è<sup>1</sup> rotónda, ma è<sup>1</sup> móltó più piccóla  
 délla tèrra, e gíra<sup>5</sup> intéorno a quéstà<sup>6</sup> continovaménte. La lúna  
 non ha<sup>1</sup> lúce da sè, ma la ricéve<sup>7</sup> dal sóle. Êcco<sup>8</sup> perchè la lúna  
 óra la vediámo<sup>9</sup> e óra non la vediámo<sup>9</sup> più, óra ne vediámo<sup>9</sup>  
 mézza, óra uno spicchio, óra un po' più, óra un po' méno, secóndo  
 che di éssa ci si presénta<sup>10</sup> úna párté maggióre o minóre illumi-  
 náta dal sóle. Le stélle sóno<sup>1</sup> tútti quéi<sup>11</sup> púnti luminósi che  
 vediámo<sup>9</sup> brilláre di<sup>12</sup> nótte nel firmaménto. Non crediáte,<sup>13</sup> però,  
 che le stélle slano<sup>1</sup> piccóle cóme nói le vediámo<sup>9</sup>: ci páiono<sup>14</sup>  
 cosí piccine per la smisuráta distánza che córre<sup>15</sup> da lóro a nói;  
 ma le stélle sóno<sup>1</sup> grandissime, e ce n'è di quélle<sup>16</sup> che sóno<sup>1</sup> in-

finitamente più grandi del sóle. Gli è<sup>1</sup> che il sóle è<sup>1</sup> méno lontano di ésse dálla tērra che nói abitiámo.<sup>17</sup>

<sup>1</sup> È = is; *sóno, stáno* (subj.) = are; *ha* = has. <sup>2</sup> To think. <sup>3</sup> It seems. <sup>4</sup> Shines. <sup>5</sup> Turns. <sup>6</sup> It. <sup>7</sup> *La riceve* = receives it. <sup>8</sup> That is. <sup>9</sup> *Vedidmo* = we see; *la vedidmo* = we see it; *le vedidmo* = we see them; *ne vedidmo* = we see of it. <sup>10</sup> *Ci si presenta* = there presents itself to us. <sup>11</sup> Those. <sup>12</sup> At. <sup>13</sup> *Non credidte* = do not think. <sup>14</sup> *Ci páiono* = they seem to us. <sup>15</sup> Intervenes. <sup>16</sup> *Ce n' è di quélle* = there are some. <sup>17</sup> Inhabit.

## EXERCISE 6.

The moon is<sup>1</sup> in the middle of<sup>2</sup> the sky. The moon is<sup>1</sup> round; it-looks<sup>3</sup> perfectly round like a melon. And it-looks,<sup>3</sup> too, as big as a melon. The moon seems<sup>4</sup> little because it-is<sup>1</sup> far, far from us who are<sup>5</sup> on the earth. The moon renders<sup>6</sup> a great service to men: because when everything is<sup>1</sup> dark, it<sup>7</sup> illumines<sup>8</sup> with its beautiful light the earth which we-inhabit.<sup>9</sup> The stars are<sup>10</sup> larger than the moon, but to-look-at-them<sup>11</sup> they-seem<sup>12</sup> smaller, because they-are<sup>10</sup> so-much<sup>13</sup> further than the moon. The most beautiful,<sup>14</sup> the most intense<sup>14</sup> light comes<sup>15</sup> from the sun.

<sup>1</sup> È. <sup>2</sup> A. <sup>3</sup> Par or páre. <sup>4</sup> Si véde. <sup>5</sup> Sidmo. <sup>6</sup> Fa. <sup>7</sup> Éssa. <sup>8</sup> Rischidra. <sup>9</sup> Abitiámo. <sup>10</sup> Sóno. <sup>11</sup> A vederle. <sup>12</sup> Páiono. <sup>13</sup> Tanto. <sup>14</sup> Both adjectives follow the noun. <sup>15</sup> Viène.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES;  
NUMERALS.

## AUGMENTATIVE AND DIMINUTIVE ENDINGS.

35. Instead of a word expressing size or quality the Italians often use a suffix. This suffix may be added to a noun, an adjective, or an adverb. When added to an adjective, and generally when added to a noun, it takes the gender of the word to which it is affixed: occasionally,

however, a suffix with masculine termination is added to a feminine noun, which thereby becomes masculine. A word loses its final vowel before a suffix; but the preceding consonant, if it be *c* or *g*, must keep its former quality: as *Carlo* + *ino* = *Carlino*, *vóce* + *one* = *vocióne*, *pôco* + *ino* = *pochino*, *addio* + *ino* = *adagino*.

a. The commonest ending is *-issimo* (fem. *-issima*), "very," which in general is added only to adjectives and adverbs. Adverbs in *-mente* add the *-issima* before the *-mente* (see 85). Any adjective may take it, and it is very often used in cases where it would be entirely superfluous in English.

Ex.: *Largo*, wide; *larghissimo*, very wide.  
*Bene*, well; *bentissimo*, very well.  
*Grande*, big; *grandissimo*, very big.  
*Fa un tempo bellissimo*, it's beautiful weather.  
*Bellissimamente*, very beautifully.

b. The principal suffix denoting bigness is *-one*; it is always masculine, but has a rare feminine form, *-ona*.

Ex.: *Libro*, book; *librone*, big book.  
*Casa*, house; *casone*, large house.  
*Boccia*, decanter; *bocciona*, big decanter.

c. The most important suffixes denoting smallness are *-ino*, *-cino*, *-icino*, *-iccino*, *-étto*, *-ello*, *-cèllo*, *-icèllo*, *-arèllo*, *-erèllo*, *-òtto*, *-uccio*, *-uzzo*, *-uòlo*, with their fem. *-ina*, etc. These endings, especially *-uccio*, are often used to express affection; some of them may be used to express pity or contempt. *Ôtto* sometimes means "somewhat large" instead of "small."

Ex.: *Sorella*, sister; *sorellina*, little sister.  
*Bello*, beautiful; *bellino*, pretty.  
*Brutto*, ugly; *bruttino*, rather ugly.  
*Piazza*, square; *piazzetta*, little square.  
*Giorgio*, George; *Giorgétto*, Georgie.

*Campana*, bell; *campanello*, little bell.  
*Aquila*, eagle; *aquilotto*, eaglet.  
*Casa*, house; *casotta*, rather large house.  
*Giovanni*, John; *Giovannuccio*, dear little Johnny.  
*Pazzo*, mad; *pazzarella*, poor mad woman.  
*Povero*, poor; *poverini*, poor things!

d. The ending *-uccio* denotes worthlessness.

Ex.: *Roba*, stuff, goods; *robaucio*, trash.  
*Tempo*, weather; *tempuccio*, nasty weather.  
*Alfredo*, Alfred; *Alfreduccio*, naughty Alfred.

36. Of the endings added to nouns *-ino* is by far the most common; the only ones that are freely used to form new compounds are *-ino*, "little," *-one*, "great," *-uccio*, "dear," and *-uccio*, "bad." In very many cases endings lose their character of independent suffixes, and become inseparable parts of certain words, whose meanings they often change: as *scala*, "stairway"; *scalino*, "stair"; *scalétto*, "ladder." Some suffixes (as *-uolo*) are rarely used except in this way. Others (as *-cino*, *-icino*, *-ello*, *-ello*, *-icello*, *-arello*, *-erello*) cannot be attached to any word at pleasure, their use being determined by precedent or euphony.

37. Sometimes several suffixes are added at once to the same word: as *ladro*, "thief"; *ladrone*, "terrible thief"; *ladroncello*, "terrible little thief."

## NUMERALS.

38. The cardinal numerals are:—

1, <i>uno</i> .	5, <i>cinque</i> .	9, <i>nove</i> .	13, <i>trédici</i> .
2, <i>due</i> .	6, <i>séi</i> .	10, <i>dièci</i> .	14, <i>quattórdici</i> .
3, <i>tre</i> .	7, <i>sette</i> .	11, <i>undici</i> .	15, <i>quindici</i> .
4, <i>quattro</i> .	8, <i>otto</i> .	12, <i>dodici</i> .	16, <i>sédici</i> .

17, <i>diciasette.</i>	26, <i>ventisei.</i>	50, <i>cinquanta.</i>	125, <i>cento venti-</i>
18, <i>diciotto.</i>	27, <i>ventisette.</i>	60, <i>sessanta.</i>	<i>cinque.</i>
19, <i>diciannove.</i>	28, <i>ventotto</i> or	70, <i>settanta.</i>	200, <i>dugento</i> or
20, <i>venti.</i>	<i>vent' otto.</i>	80, <i>ottanta.</i>	<i>duecento.</i>
21, <i>ventuno</i> or	29, <i>ventinove.</i>	90, <i>novanta.</i>	250, <i>dugento cin-</i>
<i>vent' uno.</i>	30, <i>trenta.</i>	100, <i>cento.</i>	<i>quanta.</i>
22, <i>ventidue.</i>	31, <i>trentuno</i> or	101, <i>centuno</i> or	300, <i>trecento.</i>
23, <i>ventitrè.</i>	<i>trent' uno.</i>	<i>cent' uno.</i>	400, <i>quattrocento.</i>
24, <i>ventiquattro.</i>	32, <i>trentadue.</i>	105, <i>centocinque.</i>	1000, <i>mille.</i>
25, <i>venticinque.</i>	40, <i>quaranta.</i>	115, <i>centoquindici.</i>	2000, <i>due mila.</i>

*Uno* has a feminine *una* ; when used *adjectively* it has the same forms as the indefinite article ; so also *ventuno*, etc. The plural of *mille* is *mila*. "A million" is *un milione* or *millione*, of which the plural is *milioni* or *millioni*.

(1) No conjunction is used between the different parts of a number : as *dugento quaranta*, "two hundred and forty." No indefinite article is used before *cento* and *mille* : as *cento libri*, "a hundred books."

(2) *Cento*, *dugento*, etc., when followed by another numeral of more than two syllables may lose the final syllable -to : as *seicento cinquanta* or *seicencinquanta*, "six hundred and fifty."

(3) "Eleven hundred," "twelve hundred," etc., must be rendered *millecento*, *mille dugento*, etc. : as *mille ottocento ottantasette*, 1887.

(4) "Both," "all three," etc., are *tutti* (fem. *tutte*) *e due*, *tutti* (fem. *tutte*) *e tre*, etc.

a. If the noun modified by *ventuno*, *trentuno*, etc., follows this numeral, it should be in the singular ; if it precedes, in the plural.

Ex. : *Sessantuna lira* or *lire sessantuna*, 61 francs.

b. In dates the definite article is prefixed to the number representing the year, if that number follows a preposition, or does not follow the name of a month.

Ex.: *Nel mille ottocento ottantasette*, in 1887.

c. "What time is it?" is *che ora è?* "It is six," etc., is *sóno le sei*, etc., *óre* being understood. "One o'clock" is *il tócco*.

Ex.: *Sóno le due e mezzo*, it's half-past two.

*Sóno le tre e dièci*, it's ten minutes past three.

*Ci mancano venti minúti dlle quáttro*, it's twenty minutes to four.

*Sóno le cinque méno un quárto*, it's a quarter to five.

### 39. The ordinal numerals are : —

1st, <i>primo</i> .	12th, <i>duodécimo</i> or	20th, <i>ventésimo</i> .
2d, <i>secóndo</i> .	<i>décimo secóndo</i> .	21st, <i>ventésimo primo</i> or
3d, <i>térzo</i> .	13th, <i>tredicésimo</i> or	<i>ventunésimo</i> .
4th, <i>quárto</i> .	<i>décimo térzo</i> .	22d, <i>ventésimo secóndo</i>
5th, <i>quínto</i> .	14th, <i>quattordicésimo</i> or	or <i>ventiduesimo</i> .
6th, <i>sésto</i> .	<i>décimo quárto</i> .	30th, <i>trentésimo</i> .
7th, <i>séttimo</i> .	15th, <i>quindicésimo</i> or	100th, <i>centésimo</i> .
8th, <i>ottávo</i> .	<i>décimo quínto</i> .	101st, <i>centésimo primo</i> .
9th, <i>nóno</i> .	16th, <i>décimo sésto</i> .	115th, <i>centoquindicésimo</i> .
10th, <i>décimo</i> .	17th, <i>décimo séttimo</i> .	200th, <i>ducentésimo</i> .
11th, <i>undécimo</i> or	18th, <i>décimo ottávo</i> .	1000th, <i>millésimo</i> .
<i>décimo primo</i> .	19th, <i>décimo nóno</i> .	2000th, <i>duemilésimo</i> .

All of them form their feminines and plurals like other adjectives in *o*.

Ex.: *Le settantésime quinte cose*, the 75th things.

a. Ordinal numerals are used after the words "book," "chapter," and the names of rulers; but no article intervenes.

Ex.: *Carlo secóndo*, Charles the Second; *Pio nóno*, Pius IX.

*Libro térzo*, Book the Third; *capítolo quárto*, chapter four.

b. For the day of the month, except the first, a cardinal number is used.

Ex.: *Il dì cinque d' aprile* or *il cinque aprile*, the fifth of April.

*Il primo di mággio*, the first of May.

c. "A third," "a fourth," "a fifth," etc., are *un terzo, un quarto, un quinto*, etc. "Half" is *la metà*; the adjective "half" is *métzo*.

40. "A couple" or "a pair" is *un páio*. "A dozen" is *una dozzina*. The expressions *una decina, una ventina, una trentina*, etc., *un centináo, un migliáo*, mean "about ten," "about twenty," etc. (see 23, d). "Once," "twice," etc., are *una vólta, due vólte*, etc.

Ex.: *Un páio di scórpe*, a pair of shoes.

*Una cinquantina di persóne*, some fifty persons.

*L'ho visto parécchie vólte*, I've seen it several times.

#### EXERCISE 7.

Con l'orolôgio si véde<sup>1</sup> che ôre sóno.<sup>2</sup> Un giòrno è<sup>3</sup> ventiquátt' ôre. Cêrte ôre del giòrno è<sup>2</sup> lúme, cêrte ôre è<sup>2</sup> búio. Un giòrno è<sup>3</sup> ventiquátt' ôre, ma súlla móstra dell' orolôgio, délle ôre ce n' è<sup>4</sup> segnâte dódici, perchè le ôre del giòrno si cóntano<sup>5</sup> dall' úna álle dódici, cosí: tócco, dúe, tre, quáttro, cínque, sêi, sêtte, ôtto, nôve, diêci, úndici e dódici. Arriváti a dódici non si séguita<sup>6</sup> a díre trédici, quattórdici, e vía fino a ventiquáttro; ma si ricomíncia<sup>7</sup> da cápo dal tócco e si arríva<sup>8</sup> fino a dódici. Il cónto tórna<sup>9</sup> lo stésso: infátti le ôre del giòrno son<sup>11</sup> ventiquáttro; e dódici e dódici, sommáti insiême, fórmano<sup>10</sup> ventiquáttro. Dódici ôre sóno<sup>11</sup> la metà del giòrno. L' orolôgio ha<sup>12</sup> dódici ôre; e le ha<sup>13</sup> segnâte giro giro álla móstra. L' óra è<sup>3</sup> sessánta minúti; e l' orolôgio ségna<sup>14</sup> ánche i minúti. Quêlle righettíne tórno tórno álla móstra, fra un' óra e un' áltra, sóno<sup>11</sup> i sessánta minúti che fórmano<sup>10</sup> l' óra. La lancétta gránde ségna<sup>14</sup> i minúti. La lancétta piccína ségna<sup>14</sup> le ôre. La lancétta gránde ógni óra fa<sup>15</sup> il giro di tútti e sessánta i minúti; gira<sup>16</sup> tútta la móstra. La lancétta piccína ógni óra ségna<sup>14</sup> un número, e a girá tútta la móstra ci métte<sup>17</sup> dódici ôre, perchè dódici son<sup>11</sup> le ôre segnâte súlla mó-

stra. Óra sóno<sup>2</sup> le dódici; tütte e dúe le lancétte sóno<sup>11</sup> sùlle dódici. Fra un' óra la lancétta gránde avrà<sup>18</sup> giráta tútta la móstra, e sarà<sup>19</sup> daccápo sul número 12, e la lancétta piccina sarà<sup>19</sup> sull' úno.

- <sup>1</sup> *Si véde* = we see. <sup>2</sup> It is. <sup>3</sup> Is. <sup>4</sup> *Ce n'è* = there are. <sup>5</sup> *Si contano* = are counted. <sup>6</sup> *Non si séguita* = we don't go on. <sup>7</sup> *Si ricomincia* = we begin over again. <sup>8</sup> *Si arriva* = we go. <sup>9</sup> Amounts to. <sup>10</sup> Make. <sup>11</sup> Are. <sup>12</sup> Has. <sup>13</sup> *Le ha* = it has them. <sup>14</sup> Marks. <sup>15</sup> Makes. <sup>16</sup> It goes around. <sup>17</sup> *Ci mette* = it takes. <sup>18</sup> Will have. <sup>19</sup> Will be.

## EXERCISE 8.

A year is<sup>1</sup> 365 days. Every seven days is<sup>1</sup> a week. The days of the week are-called<sup>2</sup>: Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, Saturday. Sunday<sup>3</sup> is<sup>1</sup> a<sup>4</sup> holiday; the other days we-work,<sup>5</sup> and therefore they-are-called<sup>2</sup> working-days. The year is-divided<sup>6</sup> into twelve months. The months are-called<sup>2</sup>: January, February, March, April, May, June, July, August, September, October, November, December.<sup>17</sup> The month is<sup>1</sup> thirty or thirty-one days.<sup>18</sup> When the month begins,<sup>7</sup> it-is-called<sup>8</sup> the first of the month; the second day is-called<sup>8</sup> the second of the month, the third, the third, and so-on<sup>9</sup> until the thirtieth or thirty-first. January, March, May, July, August, October, and<sup>4</sup> December have<sup>10</sup> thirty-one days. April, June, September, and<sup>4</sup> November have<sup>10</sup> thirty days. February is<sup>1</sup> the shortest month, because it-has<sup>11</sup> twenty-eight days only.<sup>12</sup> But every four years February has<sup>11</sup> twenty-nine days; and that<sup>16</sup> year is-called<sup>13</sup> leap-year. The year begins<sup>7</sup> from January; January is,<sup>1</sup> then,<sup>14</sup> the first month of the year. The year ends<sup>15</sup> with December; so<sup>14</sup> December is<sup>1</sup> the last month of the year.

- <sup>1</sup> È. <sup>2</sup> *Si chiamano*. <sup>3</sup> Use def. article. <sup>4</sup> Omit. <sup>5</sup> *Si lavora*. <sup>6</sup> *Si divide*. <sup>7</sup> *Comincia*. <sup>8</sup> *Si dice*. <sup>9</sup> *Così*. <sup>10</sup> *Hanno*. <sup>11</sup> *Ha*. <sup>12</sup> *Sóli*. <sup>13</sup> *Si chiama*. <sup>14</sup> *Dunque*. <sup>15</sup> *Finita*. <sup>16</sup> *Quell'*. <sup>17</sup> Use no article with the names of months. <sup>18</sup> See 38, *Úno*, and 38, *a*.

## DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

**41.** For the indefinite pronouns, see **86-91**.

**42.** (1) The demonstrative pronouns used adjectively are *questo*, "this," and *quello* or *cotesto*, "that." *Cotesto* (spelled also *codesto*) is used of objects near the person addressed. *Questo* and *cotesto* are inflected like other adjectives; but they generally drop *o* before a vowel. *Quello* is inflected like *bello* (see **29**, c).

Ex.: *Quest' uomo*, this man; *queste ragazze*, these girls.  
*Quel bambino*, that infant; *queli fanciulli*, those children.  
*Quell' amico*, that friend; *quegli sposi*, that couple.  
*Quello zio*, that uncle; *quelle signore*, those ladies.

*Questo* and *quello* are also used substantively for "this," "that," "this one," "that one": as *fate questo*, *non fate quello*, "do this, don't do that."

(2) "This man" is translated by *questi*, "that man" by *quegli*, *queli*, or *cotesti* (rare); these words are invariable, refer only to persons, and are used only in the nominative singular. *Costui* and *colui* mean respectively the same as *questi* and *quegli*, but are not defective, having a feminine singular *costei*, *collei*, and a plural (both genders alike) *costoro*, *coloro*. *Costui* is often used in a depreciative sense.

Ex.: *Questi è francese e quegli è tedesco*, this man is French and that one is German.  
*Chi è costui*, who is this fellow?  
*Parlo di colui*, I speak of that man.

(3) *Ciò*, "this," "that," is invariable, and represents a whole idea, not a single word: as *ciò è véro*, "that's so."

a. *Quéllo* and *quéstó*, *quégli* and *quéstí* mean also "the former," "the latter."

b. "He who" is *colúí che*, or simply *chi*. "The one who, whom, which," "that which," "what" is *quéllo che* or *quel che*.

Ex.: *Chi lavóra* or *colúí che lavóra*, he who works.

*Quel che dico* to, the one I mean.

*A quel che sento*, from what I hear.

43. The interrogative "who," "whom," is *chi*. "What?" used substantively is *che*, *che còsa*, or *còsa*.\* "What?" used adjectively is *che* or *quále*. "Which?" is *quále*. *Quále* has a plural *quáli*; *chi* and *che* are invariable. "How much?" is *quánto* (-a), "how many?" is *quánti* (-e).

Ex.: *Chi védo*, whom do I see?

*Di chi parláte*, of whom do you speak?

*Che còsa dice*, what does he say?

*Che* or *quáli libri avéte compráto*, what books did you buy?

*Quále di quéstí volúmi è il primo*, which of these volumes is the first?

a. The interrogative "whose" is *di chi*.

Ex.: *Di chi è quéstó bigliétto*, whose card is this?

b. In exclamations "what a," "what," are rendered by *che* or *quále* without any article.

Ex.: *Che bel paése*, what a beautiful country!

44. The principal relative pronouns are *che*, *cui*, *il quále*: they are all applied to both persons and things, and mean "who," "whom," "which," or "that." *Il quále* is inflected

---

\* *Còsa* (as *còsa dice*?) is generally avoided in written Italian. Note that *chi* is used in *indirect*, as well as in direct questions.

(*la quäle, i quälì, le quälì*). *Che* and *cui* are invariable. in general *che* is used only as subject and direct object. *cui* only after prepositions or as indirect object. In poetry *onde* is often used to signify *of which* or *from which*.

Ex.: *La lingua che si parla*, the language which we speak.

*L' uòmo del quäle si tràtta*, the man of whom we are speaking.

*Le persòne a cui or àlle quälì parlo*, the persons to whom I speak.

*Lo scritto di cui parlo*, the work I am speaking of.

(1) As subject or direct object *che* is preferred to *il quäle*, unless clearness requires the latter.

(2) The relative "whose" is *il cui* or *del quäle*.

Ex.: *Una signòra, il cui nòme è Lucia*, a lady whose name is Lucy.

*Un uòmo, le cui figlie conosco*, a man whose daughters I know.

*L' autòre, del cui libro si parla*, the author whose book we are speaking of.

*Le chièse delle quälì si vèdono le cúpole*, the churches whose domes we see.

(3) The relative cannot be omitted in Italian.

Ex.: *Le càse che ho comprate*, the houses I have bought.

a. "Such . . . as" is *täle . . . quäle*; in poetry *täle, quäle* have a plural *tài, quài* instead of *táli, quáli*. "As much as" is *tàn'o quánto*; "as many as" is *tánti quánti*.

Ex.: *Quäle è il pàdre tale è il figlio*, as is the father, so is the son

b. "He who" is *chi* or *colui che* (see 42, b).

Ex.: *Chi ha la sanità è ricco*, he who has health is rich.

c. "Whoever" is *chiunque*; "whatever" as a substantive is *tutto quel che* or *chechè*, as an adjective *quäle che, qualunque che, qualunque, per quánto*. These words, excepting *tutto quel che*, all take the subjunctive. *Checchè* is now but little used.

**Ex. :** *Chiunque sidte*, whoever you may be.

*Checchè facciate, fátelo bène*, whatever you do, do it well.

*Tutto quel che volete*, whatever you wish.

*Quali che siano i vòstri motivi*, whatever your motives may be.

*Qualunque siano i suoi talenti*, whatever his talents may be.

*In qualunque stato che io mi trovi*, in whatever condition I may find myself.

*Per quante ricchezze egli abbia*, whatever riches he may have.

#### 45. The possessive pronouns are :—

My :	m., <i>il mio</i> ,	f., <i>la mia</i> ,	m. pl., <i>i miei</i> ,	f. pl., <i>le mie</i> .
Thy :	<i>il tuo</i> ,	<i>la tua</i> ,	<i>i tuoi</i> ,	<i>le tue</i> .
His, her, its :	<i>il suo</i> ,	<i>la sua</i> ,	<i>i suoi</i> ,	<i>le sue</i> .
Our :	<i>il nostro</i> ,	<i>la nostra</i> ,	<i>i nostri</i> ,	<i>le nostre</i> .
Your :	<i>il vostro</i> ,	<i>la vostra</i> ,	<i>i vostri</i> ,	<i>le vostre</i> .
Their :	<i>il loro</i> ,	<i>la loro</i> ,	<i>i loro</i> ,	<i>le loro</i> .

*Loro* is invariable ; the others agree with the object possessed : as *il mio naso*, "my nose" ; *la sua bocca*, "his, her mouth" ; *i vostri occhi*, "your eyes" ; *le loro labbra*, "their lips."

When the possessive stands alone in the predicate, the article is omitted if the possessive is used adjectively.

**Ex. :** *Questo cappello è mio*, this hat is mine.

*Questo cappello è il mio*, this hat is mine (*i.e.*, the one that belongs to me).

- a.* The article (unless it might be used in English) is omitted before the possessive : (1) When a numeral, an adjective of quantity, or a demonstrative or interrogative adjective precedes it : as *due cani suoi*, "two dogs of his" (but *i due cani suoi*, "the two dogs of his" or "his two dogs") ; *molti miei amici*, "many friends of mine" (but *i molti miei amici*, "the many friends of mine" or "my many friends") ; *questo tuo difetto*, "this fault of thine." (2) When the possessive forms part of a title : as *Vòstra Maestà*,

"Your Majesty"; *Sua Altezza*, "His Highness." (3) When the possessive modifies a noun used in the vocative (in this case the possessive generally follows its noun): as *amico mio*, "my friend!" (4) The article is generally omitted also when the possessive precedes a noun in the singular expressing relationship: as *nostra madre*, "our mother." But if the noun has a diminutive ending, or an adjective precedes the noun, the article is not omitted: as *il tuo fratellino*, "thy little brother"; *la vostra gentilissima sorella*, "your kind sister." (5) The article is omitted also in certain phrases, such as: *da parte mia*, "for me"; *per amor mio*, "for my sake"; *in casa nostra*, "in our house"; *a modo suo*, "in his own way"; *è colpa vostra*, "it's your fault."

b. The possessive, when not necessary for clearness, is usually replaced by a definite article.

Ex.: *Come sta la mamma*, how is your mother?

*Ha perduto il giudizio*, he has lost his senses.

*Edanno i piedi*, they stamp their feet.

c. When the name of the thing possessed is direct object of a verb, the Italians often use instead of the possessive a conjunctive personal pronoun (see 47) and a definite article. If the thing possessed be a part of the body or clothing, this construction is frequent, even when the name of the thing is not object of a verb.

Ex.: *Si strappa i capelli*, he tears his hair (lit., he tears to himself the hairs).

*Mi taglio il dito*, I cut my finger (I cut to myself the finger).

*Il cane gli agguantò la gamba*, the dog seized his leg (seized to him the leg).

*Mi duole il capo*, my head aches (to me aches the head).

d. When the possessor is not the subject of the sentence, "his," "her" are, for the sake of clearness, often rendered *di lui*, *di lei*: as *egli non conosce il di lei cuore*, "he does not know her heart."

e. "A . . . of mine, of thine," etc., is *un mio*, *un tuo*, etc.: as *una nostra cugina*, "a cousin of ours."

## EXERCISE 9.

Quándo cádde<sup>1</sup> l' impêro, Siêna soffrì<sup>2</sup> méno délle áltre città toscáne dälle invasíoni déi bárbari ; ma vénne<sup>3</sup> sótto la signoría déi Longobárdi, e pòi fu<sup>4</sup> úna délle città libere di Carlomágno, néi cónti e baróni del quále, arricchiti dälle têrre e daí castèlli che diêde<sup>5</sup> lóro<sup>6</sup> l' imperatóre, i nòbili senési crédono<sup>7</sup> trováre l' orígine délla lóro nobiltà. Quésti ládri forestiêri, i cúi nldi néi dintórni di Firênze i cittadîni di quêsto comúne cercávano<sup>8</sup> di distrúggere, abbandonárono<sup>9</sup> voluntariaménte i lóro castèlli nel território senése, ed entrárono<sup>10</sup> nêlla città, che da éssi e daí véscovi veníva<sup>4</sup> abbellíta di grándi palázzi e governáta con úna máno di fêrro, finchè<sup>11</sup> i comúni non<sup>11</sup> si levárono<sup>12</sup> e non<sup>11</sup> fécono<sup>13</sup> prevalére il lóro dirítto a partecipáre nêlla còsa púbblica.

<sup>1</sup> Fell. <sup>2</sup> Suffered. <sup>3</sup> It came. <sup>4</sup> Was. <sup>5</sup> Gave. <sup>6</sup> To them. <sup>7</sup> Think, believe. <sup>8</sup> Were trying. <sup>9</sup> Abandoned. <sup>10</sup> Entered. <sup>11</sup> *Finchè non =* until <sup>12</sup> *Si levárono =* arose. <sup>13</sup> Made.

## EXERCISE 10.

Charles V made<sup>1</sup> of Siena a fief for his son Philip II, who ceded-it<sup>2</sup> to Cosimo I, and the latter built-there<sup>3</sup> the fort which the Spaniards had-tried-to<sup>4</sup> construct. The city remained<sup>5</sup> under the rule of the good dukes of Lorraine, until Napoleon made-it<sup>6</sup> capital of the department of the Ombrone. After the fall of the emperor, it-returned<sup>7</sup> under the dominion of the dukes. In<sup>8</sup> 1860 it-was<sup>9</sup> the first Tuscan city that voted<sup>10</sup> the union of Italy under Victor Emmanuel II, the only honest king of whom history speaks.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Féce.* <sup>2</sup> *La cedette.* <sup>3</sup> *Vi fabbricò.* <sup>4</sup> *Avévano volúto.* <sup>5</sup> *Restò.* <sup>6</sup> *La féce.* <sup>7</sup> *Ritornò.* <sup>8</sup> See 38, b. <sup>9</sup> *Fu.* <sup>10</sup> *Votòsse.* <sup>11</sup> *Parli,* which should precede its subject.

## PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

**46.** Personal pronouns are divided into two classes, conjunctive and disjunctive: the conjunctive forms are those used as direct object of a verb, and as indirect object without a preposition; the disjunctive forms are those used as subject of a verb, and as object of a preposition.

Ex.: *ÈGLI* ve lo *dà* *per* ME.  
He to you it gives for me.

## CONJUNCTIVE FORMS.

**47.** Conjunctive pronouns are always unaccented, and cannot be separated from the verb, which they sometimes follow but oftener precede, as will be explained in **48**.

They are used only as direct object of a verb or as indirect object without a preposition. The forms are :—

*Mi*, me, to me.

*Ti*, thee, to thee.

*Ci*, us, to us.\*

*Vi*, you, to you.

*Si* (reflexive), himself, to himself; herself, to herself; itself, to itself.

*Si* (reflexive), themselves, to themselves.

*Lo*, him; \* *gli*, to him.†

*La*, her; *le*, to her.

*Li*, them (masc.); *loro*, to them.†

*Le*, them (fem.); *loro*, to them.

"It" must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. "It" representing not a word, but a whole clause, is *lo*.‡

Ex.: *Mi conosce*, he knows me; *ti do i libri*, I give thee the books.

*Ci vedete*, you see us; *vi dico tutto*, I tell you everything.

*Si veste*, he dresses himself; *si divertono*, they amuse themselves.

---

\* In old Italian and in poetry *ne* is often used for *ci*, and *il* for *lo*.

† In conversation *li* is often used for *gli*, and *gli* or *li* for *loro*.

‡ In certain idiomatic phrases *la* represents an indefinite object: as *pagarla cara*, "to pay dearly for it."

*Ècco l'oro: ve lo do*, here's the gold: I give it to you.

*Ècco la palla: la vèdo*, here's the ball: I see it.

*Còme potèva sapère se lo veniva o no? — Lo ha indovinato.* —

"How could he tell whether I was coming or not?" "He guessed it."

(1) It will be seen that the third person (not reflexive) has different forms for the direct and the indirect object.

Ex.: *Lo trovai*, I found him; *gli fèci un regalo*, I made him a present; *la làscia*, he leaves her; *le scrìve*, he writes to her.

*Li cercate*, you seek them (masc.); *le salutate*, you greet them (fem.); *mandiamo loro mille saluti*, we send them (masc. or fem.) a thousand greetings.

(2) The reflexive pronouns of the first and second persons are *mi*, *ci*; *ti*, *vi*. All plural reflexive pronouns are used also as reciprocal pronouns. A verb is called *reflexive* when it has as *direct* or *indirect* object a *conjunctive* pronoun representing the same person as its subject.

Ex.: *Mi difèndo*, I defend myself; *vi lavate*, you wash yourselves.

*Si fa onóre*, she does herself credit; *si odiano*, they hate each other; *ci amiamo*, we love one another.

(3) Another conjunctive pronoun is *ne*,\* "of it," "of them"; it corresponds also to "any," "some" when these words mean "any, some of it," "any, some of them." It is often used pleonastically in Italian.

Ex.: *Ne parla*, he speaks of it; *ne ho*, I have some.

*Non ne abbiamo*, we haven't any; *ne volete*, do you want any?

*Tu ne approfitti di questa libertà*, you make good use of this liberty.

a. *Vi*, "you," and *ci* and *ne*, "us," are not distinguished by form nor position from the adverbs *vi*, *ci*, meaning "there," "here," "to it," "to them,"† and the adverb *ne*, "thence" (see 84):\* as *ci vado*, "I go there"; *vi è stato*, "he has been there."

\* Cf. French *en*.

† Cf. French *y*.

**48.** The conjunctive pronouns, except *loro*, immediately precede the verb: as *mi vedéte*, "you see me"; *non lo capísco*, "I don't understand him."

But when the verb is an infinitive,\* a positive imperative,† a present participle, or a past participle used without an auxiliary, the pronoun follows the verb, and is written as one word with it: as *per vedérlo*, "to see him"; *di avérlo vedúto*, "to have seen him"; *vedételi*, "see them"; *vedéndoci*, "seeing us"; *avéndoci vedúto*, "having seen us"; *vedútoti*, "having seen thee." The addition of the pronoun does not change the place of the accent.

*Loro* always follows the verb, but is never united to it: as *egli dà loro del vîno*, "he gives them some wine"; *parlate loro*, "speak to them." ‡

a. When an infinitive depends immediately (without an intervening preposition) on another verb, a conjunctive pronoun belonging to the infinitive may go with either verb: as *póssio vedérli* or *ti pòssio vedére*, "I can see thee." If both verbs have objects, the main verb regularly takes all conjunctive pronouns: as *ve lo sênto dîre*, "I hear you say it." See 55, first paragraph, end.

If, however, the main verb is impersonal, it cannot take the object of the infinitive: as *bisogna fârlô*, "it is necessary to do it." If the main verb is *fâre*, *lasciâre*, *sentîre*, *udîre*, or *vedére*, it must take the pronoun: as *lo fa chiamâre*, "he has him called." A reflexive pronoun oftenest goes with the main verb.

If the main verb is *fâre*, and the dependent infinitive has a direct object, the object of *fâre*, if it has one, must be indirect:

\* Not the infinitive used — with a negative — as imperative (see 72): as *non lo fâre*, "do not do it" (second pers. sing.).

† Not the negative imperative, nor the subjunctive used imperatively (see 77, a): as *non li guardâte*, "do not look at them"; *si rîgoli*, "let him moderate himself" (third pers. sing. pres. subj.).

‡ Students should follow strictly all of these rules; but they will find that the first is, in certain cases, not always observed by good Italian writers. In literature a pronoun often follows a verb that begins a sentence.

as *le fa avère la lèttera*, "he lets her have the letter"; *fàteli vedère a quel signòre*, "let that gentleman see them"; *dovréti fàrglielo accettàre*, "I ought to make him accept it." This construction is generally used also with *lasciàre*, "to let," and often with *sentìre* and *udìre*, "to hear," and *vedère*, "to see." Note that the main verb takes all conjunctive pronouns.

b. When a conjunctive pronoun is joined to an infinitive, that infinitive drops its final *e*; if it ends in *-rre*, it drops *-re*: as *fàrlo (fàre)*, "to do it"; *condúrvi (condúrre)*, "to conduct you."

c. The final vowel of *mi*, *ti*, *si* is often, and that of *lo*, *la* is nearly always elided before a verb beginning with a vowel: as *l' amo*, "I love thee"; *l' ho visto*, "I've seen him."

d. All conjunctive pronouns except *gli* and *glie* (see 50) double their initial consonant when added to any form of a verb that ends in an accented vowel: as *dámmi* (imper. *da'* from *dàre*), "give me"; *dillo* (imper. *dì* from *dire*), "say it"; *parleròlle* (antique, for *le parlerò*), "I shall speak to her."

e. Pronouns are joined to the interjection *ecco*, "see here," just as they are joined to the imperative of a verb: as *èccomi*, "here I am"; *èccotelo prònto*, "here it is ready for thee."

49. When two conjunctive pronouns come together, the indirect object precedes the direct: as *mi vi presènta*, "he introduces you to me"; *non vuol presentàrvimi*, "he will not introduce me to you"; *gli si presentò un uòmo*, "a man presented himself to him." See, however, 55, end.

*Lóro*, however, always comes last: as *presentàtela lóro*, "introduce her to them."

*Ne* follows all forms except *lóro*: as *me ne dà*, "he gives me some"; *dàtene lóro*, "give them some."

50. *Mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *si* change their *i* to *e* before *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne* (pronoun or adverb); and if the two words follow the verb, they are joined together: as *me lo díce*, "he tells me

it"; *ve ne domándo*, "I ask you for some"; *mandátecelo*, "send it to us."\* *Gli* and *le* ("to her") become *glie* before *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne*, and unite with them: as *gliélli mándo*, "I send them to him, to her"; *vòglio dárglielo*, "I wish to give it to him, to her."

### DISJUNCTIVE FORMS.

51. These forms are so called because they do not necessarily stand next to the verb.

Disjunctive pronouns have two cases, nominative and objective. The objective case is used only after prepositions (for exceptions, see 51, *a*, *b*).

The disjunctive forms are these:—

<i>Io</i> , I; <i>me</i> , me.	<i>Tu</i> , thou; <i>te</i> , thee.
<i>Nói</i> , we; <i>nói</i> , us.	<i>Vói</i> , you; <i>vói</i> , you.
{ <i>Égli</i> , <i>lui</i> , <i>éssó</i> , he; <i>lui</i> , <i>éssó</i> , him.	
{ <i>Élla</i> , <i>lei</i> , <i>éssa</i> , she; <i>lei</i> , <i>éssa</i> , her.	
{ <i>Éssi</i> , <i>loró</i> ( <i>églino</i> ), they (masc.); <i>loró</i> , <i>éssi</i> , them (masc.).	
{ <i>Ésse</i> , <i>loró</i> ( <i>élleno</i> ), they (fem.); <i>loró</i> , <i>ésse</i> , them (fem.).	

"It" must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. "It" as subject of an impersonal verb is regularly not expressed (see, however, 51, *h*).

Ex.: *La càsa è grandissima, e intórno ad éssa c' è un giardino*, the house is very large, and around it there is a garden.

*Non è véro*, it isn't true; *pióve*, it rains.

(1) The various pronouns of the third person are used as follows. In speaking of things the different forms of *éssó* are generally employed. In speaking of persons *égli*

---

\* In poetry *me lo*, *me ne*, etc., often become *mel*, *men*, etc.: as *tel dico*, "I tell thee so"; *sen torna*, "he returns thence." *Non lo* often = *no*.

(or *esso*), *ella* (or *essa*), pl. *essi*, *esse* are used for the nominative in written Italian, but in the spoken language they are replaced by *lui*, *lei*, *loro*; for the objective *lui*, *lei*, *loro* are used both in conversation and in writing. *Églio* and *élleño* are antique forms. For "he who," etc., see 42, b.

Ex.: *Queste cose sono vere anch' esse*, these things are true, too.  
*Èlla parla con loro*, she speaks with them.  
*Lèi è giovane ma lui è vecchio*, she is young, but he is old.  
*Vénnero da noi anch' essi*, they came to us, too.

(2) As the Italian verb denotes by its endings the person and number of its subject, the personal pronouns of the nominative case are generally omitted. When expressed (for clearness, emphasis, or euphony), they may precede or follow the verb; in dependent clauses they nearly always follow. The subject of an interrogative verb usually comes after it, as in English.

Ex.: *Parliamo di lui*, we speak of him; *non vado*, I don't go.  
*S' io fossi ricco come è egli*, if I were rich as he is.

(3) The disjunctive reflexive pronoun is *sè*, which is masculine and feminine, singular and plural.

Ex.: *Lo fecero da sè*, they did it by themselves.

a. Use the objective case: (1) When a pronoun of the third person is not subject of an expressed verb: as *beato lui*, "happy he!" *tanto i genitori che lui sono ricchi*, "his parents as well as he are rich." (2) When the pronoun stands in the predicate after the verb *essere*: as *credendo ch' io fossi te*, "thinking I was you." But "it is I," etc., are *sono io*, *sai tu*, *è lui*, *è lei*, *siamo noi*, *siate voi*, *sono loro*. (3) In the cases mentioned in 51, b.

b. (1) Clearness or emphasis occasionally requires the disjunctive pronoun instead of the conjunctive ; in this case the conjunctive form is often inserted also.

Ex. : *Parlo a voi signóre*, I speak to you, sir.  
*Mi piace anche a me*, it pleases me too.

(2) The disjunctive form must *always* be used when the verb has two direct or two indirect objects.

Ex. : *Vedo lui e lei*, I see him and her.  
*Lo do a mio padre e a te*, I give it to my father and to thee.

c. In speaking of a company, a class, or a people *noi altri*, *voi altri* (which are also written as one word) are used for *noi*, *voi*.

Ex. : *Noi altri italiani*, we Italians.  
*Voi altri pittori*, you painters.

d. "With me," "with thee," "with himself, herself, themselves" are either *con me*, etc., or *meco*, *teco*, *seco*.

e. "Myself," "thyself," etc., used for emphasis with a pronoun or noun, are rendered by the adjective *stesso*.

Ex. : *Noi stessi la vedemmo*, we saw her ourselves.

f. "One another," "each other" is *l' un l' altro*.

Ex. : *Ci amiamo l' un l' altro*, we love one another.

g. In Florence *ella* is often shortened into *la* (plural *le*), which is used of both persons and things. In poetry *egli* becomes *ei*.

Ex. : *La non viene*, she doesn't come.  
*Pare che la si possa tener in mano*, it looks as if it might be held in the hand.

h. In impersonal phrases like "it is" the subject, "it," is occasionally expressed in Italian ; it is then translated *egli*, which in the spoken language is shortened into *gli*.

Ex. : *Gli è che*, it is because.

52. (1) The usual form of address in Italy is *Élla* \* (or *élla*), objective *Léi* (or *lèi*); in conversation *Élla* is replaced by *Léi* (or *lèi*). This word really means "it," and takes the verb in the third person; but an adjective or past participle modifying it agrees in gender with the person it represents. The plural of *Élla* is *Lóro* (or *lóro*), which takes the verb in the third person plural.

Ex.: *Léi* or *Élla* è *tedesco*, *signóre*, you are German, sir.

*Signorína Néri*, *Léi* (or *Élla*) *fu lasciáta sóla*, Miss Neri, you were left alone.

*Sóno lítto che La stía bène* (see 51, g), I'm glad you are well.

*E Lóro, dóve vánno*, and you, where are you going?

*Lóro érano già partítti*, you were already gone.

*Signoríne, lóro sóno móltto studiósse*, young ladies, you are very studious.

Like other personal pronouns, *Élla* and *Lóro* are very often omitted in the nominative.

*Léi è tróppo gentíle* or *è tróppo gentíle*, you are too kind.

*Cóme stánno*, how do you (pl.) do?

The conjunctive forms of *Élla* are *La*, *Le* (or *la*, *le*), those of *Lóro* are *Li*, *Le*, *Lóro* (or *li*, *le*, *lóro*); they occupy the same positions and undergo the same modifications as the corresponding pronouns of the third person (see 48, 49, 50). The reflexive pronoun of *Élla* and *Lóro* is *si*.

Ex.: *Le prométto di visitárla*, I promise (you) to visit you.

*Glíttlo do*, I give it to you.

*La prégo d' accomodársi*, I beg you to seat yourself.

*Vídi Léi e il bábbó*, I saw you and your father (see 51, b, 2).

*Díco lóro*, I tell you (pl.).

---

\* Standing for *Vóstra Signoría*, "your lordship" or "ladyship," or some other title of the feminine gender.

*Le cercava*, I was looking for you (fem. pl.).

*Si divertono, signorini*, are you enjoying yourselves, young gentlemen?

The possessive of *Élla* is *Súo* (or *súo*). See 45.

Ex.: *La Súa gradita lettera*, your welcome letter.

(2) *Vói* is the form of address oftenest found in books; it is used sometimes in conversation also, but only toward inferiors or toward equals with whom one is on familiar terms.\* It is employed for both plural and singular (like English "you"), although its verb is always plural; an adjective or participle modifying it agrees in gender and number with the person or persons it represents.

Ex.: *Vói qui, Pétro*, You here, Peter?

*Vói sítte dlti tútti e dúe*, you are tall, both of you.

(3) In speaking to an intimate friend, a near relative, a child, or an animal the only form of address is *tu*. *Tu* is used also, like English "thou," in poetry and poetic prose. The plural of *tu* is *vói*.

Ex.: *Ti chiamo Enrico*, I call you Henry.

*Dóve sèi tu*, where art thou?

*Voglio vedèrvi, figliuòli mèi*, my children, I wish to see you.

## EXERCISE II.

Tant' è<sup>1</sup>! dicéva<sup>2</sup> tra sè un giòrno Niccolíno; vòglio<sup>3</sup> vedére se quégli uccellíni son<sup>4</sup> náti. Li guárdo<sup>5</sup> solamén-te e riscéndo<sup>6</sup> súbito. — E Niccolíno s' arrámpica<sup>7</sup> su per quell' álbero, tentándo<sup>8</sup> d' arriváre al nído per levársi quél-la curiosità. Ma sul più bèllo,<sup>9</sup> sènte<sup>10</sup> la vóce del bábbò il quále éra<sup>11</sup> lì prèssò nél-la vióttola;

---

\* Though advocated by some of the best writers and speakers of Italian, the use of *vói* instead of *Léi* and *Lóro* has not become general. In Southern Italy, however, *vói* is the form popularly used.

vuòle<sup>12</sup> scènder lêsto per non fàrsi cògliere in fàllo, ma nêlla fúria si smarrisce,<sup>13</sup> gli mánca<sup>14</sup> il sostégno, precipita<sup>15</sup> a tèrra, e cadêndo<sup>16</sup> si fa mále a<sup>17</sup> un piêde. Il dolóre lo fa<sup>18</sup> strillàre; álle grida córrono<sup>19</sup> il bábbò e la mánma che lo raccòlgono<sup>20</sup> esclamándo<sup>21</sup>: — Te l'abbíamo<sup>22</sup> détto le cênto vòlte che a' nìdi non ti dovévi<sup>23</sup> voltàr nemméno: êcco quel che succêde<sup>24</sup> ai curiòsi e a' disubidiènti. — E sòrte per lúi che lo sentírono,<sup>25</sup> perchè cosí potérono<sup>26</sup> prònti bagnàrgli il piêde coll' áqua frédde, e dòpo avérglielo tenúto in quell' áqua parécchio têmpo, potéron<sup>26</sup> fasciàrglielo strétto; in quéstò mòdo e dòpo quálche giòrno di ripòso assóluto, Niccolino potè<sup>27</sup> ricominciàre a fàre quálche pássò per càsa.

<sup>1</sup> I don't care. <sup>2</sup> Said. <sup>3</sup> I want. <sup>4</sup> Are. <sup>5</sup> I will look at. <sup>6</sup> Will come down again. <sup>7</sup> Climbs. <sup>8</sup> Trying. <sup>9</sup> *Sul più bello* = at the critical moment. <sup>10</sup> He hears. <sup>11</sup> Was. <sup>12</sup> He tries. <sup>13</sup> He gets confused. <sup>14</sup> Fails. <sup>15</sup> He tumbles. <sup>16</sup> Falling. <sup>17</sup> *Fa mále a* = he injures. <sup>18</sup> Makes. <sup>19</sup> Run. <sup>20</sup> Pick up. <sup>21</sup> Exclaiming. <sup>22</sup> We have. <sup>23</sup> *Non dovévi* = you mustn't. <sup>24</sup> Happens. <sup>25</sup> They heard. <sup>26</sup> They could. <sup>27</sup> Was able.

## EXERCISE 12.

[In this exercise CARLINO and GORO use *vói*; ARMANDO uses *vói* before GORO enters, *Lèi* afterwards.]

*Carlino*. Sir, we are<sup>1</sup> alone.

*Armándo*. So it seems<sup>2</sup> (*looking<sup>3</sup> around*).

*Carlino*. I repeat<sup>4</sup> to you that we are<sup>1</sup> alone (*louder*).

*Armándo*. But I tell<sup>5</sup> you that I admit-it.<sup>6</sup>

*Carlino*. It is<sup>7</sup> time to-raise<sup>8</sup> the mask —

*Armándo*. (Oh-my<sup>9</sup>! this-fellow<sup>10</sup> has<sup>11</sup> recognized me.)

*Carlino*. And to<sup>12</sup> speak plainly.

*Armándo*. That is<sup>7</sup> what I wanted<sup>13</sup> to<sup>14</sup> do, but they interrupted<sup>15</sup> me all-the-time.<sup>14</sup>

*Carlino*. Do<sup>15</sup> you see<sup>16</sup> that grove over-there?

*Armándo*. I see<sup>17</sup> it.

*Carlino*. There nobody will-interrupt<sup>18</sup> you.

*Armándo*. Must<sup>19</sup> I go there to speak (*surprised*)?

*Carlino*. We shall-go<sup>20</sup> together.

*Enter*<sup>15</sup> GORO with two guns.

*Carlino.* (*Taking*<sup>21</sup> *one of-them*) Take<sup>22</sup> the other.

*Armádo.* Thanks, I am<sup>23</sup> not<sup>24</sup> a<sup>25</sup> hunter.

*Góro.* Take<sup>22</sup> it, or-else<sup>26</sup> — (*brandishing*<sup>27</sup> *a thick club*).

*Armádo.* Willingly — to<sup>28</sup> satisfy you — excuse-me,<sup>29</sup> is<sup>7</sup> it loaded?

*Carlino.* To-be-brief,<sup>30</sup> you hate<sup>31</sup> me; you must<sup>32</sup> hate me. I hate<sup>33</sup> you. So<sup>37</sup> over-there in that grove — at eighty paces from-each-other<sup>34</sup> — bang!<sup>35</sup> Either you kill<sup>36</sup> me or I kill<sup>37</sup> you.

*Armádo.* But I have<sup>38</sup> n't<sup>24</sup> these sinister intentions, which-are<sup>15</sup> contrary to my principles.

*Carlino.* In that<sup>30</sup> case you will-permit<sup>39</sup> this-man-to-amuse-himself-by-shaking<sup>40</sup> the dust from your<sup>41</sup> black coat with that club.

*Armádo.* No, indeed; what-are-you-thinking-of<sup>42</sup>? It would-be<sup>43</sup> too much-trouble<sup>44</sup>! (*Góro brandishes*<sup>45</sup> *the club*) Be-easy<sup>46</sup> with the club.

*Carlino.* No? Then<sup>47</sup> *Carlina* must<sup>48</sup> be mine.

*Armádo.* You're-welcome-to-her.<sup>49</sup>

*Carlino.* In that<sup>50</sup> case we are friends; but be-off<sup>51</sup> from<sup>52</sup> here, do-you-understand<sup>53</sup>?

*Armádo.* (What a<sup>54</sup> nice way they have<sup>55</sup> in this country!)

<sup>1</sup> *Sidmo.* <sup>2</sup> *Páre.* <sup>3</sup> *Guardádo.* <sup>4</sup> *Ripéto.* <sup>5</sup> *Dico.* <sup>6</sup> *Ne convengo.* <sup>7</sup> *È.*

<sup>8</sup> To (*di*) raise to one's self. . . . <sup>9</sup> *Ahi.* <sup>10</sup> See 42, 2. <sup>11</sup> *Ha.* <sup>12</sup> *Volévo.*

<sup>13</sup> *Hánno interrótto.* <sup>14</sup> Always. <sup>15</sup> Omit. <sup>16</sup> *Vedéte.* <sup>17</sup> *Védo.* <sup>18</sup> *Interromperà.*

<sup>19</sup> *Dévo.* <sup>20</sup> *Andrémo.* <sup>21</sup> *Prendédo.* <sup>22</sup> *Prendéte.* <sup>23</sup> *Sóno.*

<sup>24</sup> *Non*, "not," must precede the verb. <sup>25</sup> See 16, a. <sup>26</sup> *Altriménti.*

<sup>27</sup> *Agitádo.* <sup>28</sup> *Per.* <sup>29</sup> *Scúsi.* <sup>30</sup> *Alle corte.* <sup>31</sup> *Odiéte.* <sup>32</sup> *Dovéte.*

<sup>33</sup> *Ódio.* <sup>34</sup> The one from the other. <sup>35</sup> *Brun.* <sup>36</sup> *Ammazzáte.* <sup>37</sup> *Am-mázso.*

<sup>38</sup> *Ilo.* <sup>39</sup> *Permetteréte.* <sup>40</sup> That this man amuses (*divérta*) himself to shake.

<sup>41</sup> See 45, c. <sup>42</sup> Seems-it (*páre*) to you? <sup>43</sup> *Sarébbe.*

<sup>44</sup> *Incómodo.* <sup>45</sup> *Ágita.* <sup>46</sup> *Stia buóno.* <sup>47</sup> *Dunque.* <sup>48</sup> *Déve.* <sup>49</sup> Take

(*pigli*, subj.) her then (*púre*) for-yourself. <sup>50</sup> *Tal.* <sup>51</sup> *Via.* <sup>52</sup> *Di.*

<sup>53</sup> *Innuénsie.* <sup>54</sup> 43, b. <sup>55</sup> *Hánno.*

## AUXILIARY VERBS.

**53.** The irregular verbs *essere*, "to be," and *avere*, "to have," are the ones most used as auxiliaries in Italian. They are conjugated as follows :—

**a. Infinitives:** *essere*, to be; *essere stato*, to have been.

**Participles:** *essendo*, being; *essendo stato*, having been; *stato*, been.

## Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Sono,</i>	<i>Èra,</i>	<i>Fui,</i>	<i>Sarò,</i>
<i>sii,</i>	<i>èri,</i>	<i>fosti,</i>	<i>sarà,</i>
<i>è,</i>	<i>era,</i>	<i>fu,</i>	<i>sarà,</i>
<i>sidmo,</i>	<i>eravdmo.</i>	<i>fummo.</i>	<i>sarèmo,</i>
<i>sidte,</i>	<i>eravdte.</i>	<i>foste,</i>	<i>sarète,</i>
<i>sòno.</i>	<i>èrano.</i>	<i>furono.</i>	<i>saranno.</i>
PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PRETERITE PERFECT.	FUTURE PERFECT.
<i>Sòno stato (stata),</i>	<i>Èra stato (stata),</i>	<i>Fui stato (stata),</i>	<i>Sarò stato (stata),</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.
<i>sidmo stàti (stàte),</i>	<i>eravdmo stàti (stàte),</i>	<i>fummo stàti (stàte),</i>	<i>sarèmo stàti (stàte),</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

## Imperative.

## Subjunctive.

## Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
<i>Sia,</i>	<i>Fossi,</i>	<i>Sarèi,</i>	
<i>sia,</i>	<i>fossi,</i>	<i>sarèsti,</i>	
<i>sia,</i>	<i>fosse,</i>	<i>sarèbbe.</i>	
<i>sidmo,</i>	<i>sidmo,</i>	<i>sarèmmo,</i>	
<i>sidte.</i>	<i>sidte,</i>	<i>sarèste,</i>	
	<i>siano or sieno.</i>	<i>fossèro.</i>	<i>sarèbbero.</i>
	PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PERFECT.
<i>Sia stato (stata),</i>	<i>Fossi stato (stata),</i>	<i>Sarèi stato (stata),</i>	
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

b. **Infinitives:** *avére*, to have; *avére avúto*, to have had.

**Participles:** *avéndo*, having; *avéndo avúto*, having had; *avúto*, had

### Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Hò,</i>	<i>Avéva,</i>	<i>Èbbi,</i>	<i>Aurò,</i>
<i>hái,</i>	<i>avévi,</i>	<i>avésti,</i>	<i>aurdí,</i>
<i>ha,</i>	<i>avéva,</i>	<i>èbbe,</i>	<i>aurà,</i>
<i>abbiamo,</i>	<i>avevamo,</i>	<i>avémmo.</i>	<i>avrémo,</i>
<i>avéte,</i>	<i>avevate,</i>	<i>avéste,</i>	<i>avréte,</i>
<i>hanno.</i>	<i>avévano.</i>	<i>ebbero.</i>	<i>avránno.</i>
 PERFECT.	 PLUPERFECT.	 PRETERITE PERFECT.	 FUTURE PERFECT.
<i>Ho avúto,</i>	<i>Avéva avúto,</i>	<i>Èbbi avúto,</i>	<i>Aurò avúto,</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

### Imperative.

### Subjunctive.

### Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Ábbia,</i>	<i>Avéssi,</i>	<i>Aurèi,</i>
<i>Ábbi,</i>	<i>ábbi or ábbia,</i>	<i>avéssi,</i>	<i>aurésti,</i>
	<i>ábbia,</i>	<i>avésse,</i>	<i>aurèbbe,</i>
<i>abbiamo,</i>	<i>abbiamo,</i>	<i>avéssimo,</i>	<i>avrémmo,</i>
<i>abbiate.</i>	<i>abbiate.</i>	<i>avéste,</i>	<i>avréste,</i>
	<i>abbiano.</i>	<i>avéssero.</i>	<i>avrèbbero.</i>
	 PERFECT.	 PLUPERFECT.	 PERFECT.
	<i>Abbia avúto,</i>	<i>Avéssi avúto,</i>	<i>Aurèi avúto,</i>
	etc.	etc.	etc.

54. (1) The auxiliary of the passive is *essere*, "to be."

Ex.: *Sóno amato*, I am loved.

(2) The future ("shall," "will") and the conditional ("should," "would") are formed in Italian without any auxiliary.

Ex.: *Io andrò ed egli verrà*, I shall go, and he will come.

*Vorrei vederlo*, I should like to see him.

(3) The auxiliary of the perfect, pluperfect, preterite perfect, and future perfect tenses is *avére*, "to have," if the verb be active and transitive. If the verb be passive, reflexive, or reciprocal, the auxiliary is always *essere*. If the verb be intransitive, the auxiliary is generally *essere*, but sometimes *avére*.\* See 47, (2), on p. 37.

Ex.: *Ho parlato*, I have spoken.

*Avévano fatto quélste cose*, they had done these things.

*Mi sono fatto male*, I have hurt myself.

*Le donne si erano sbagliate*, the women had made a mistake.

*Sarò venuto*, I shall have come; *è nevicato*, it has snowed.

a. A past participle used with the auxiliary *essere* must agree with its subject in gender and number. But when the verb has a reflexive pronoun as *indirect* object, and some other word as *direct* object, the past participle may agree with the subject, or with the direct object, or remain invariable.

Ex.: *La ragazza è tornata*, the girl has returned.

*Le donne si sono disputate*, the women have disputed.

*La sorella si è fatta male*, our sister has hurt herself.

*Ci siamo fatti onore*, we have done ourselves credit.

*Ci siamo data (or dato) parola d' onore*, we have pledged our word of honor.

b. A past participle used with *avére* may or may not agree with its direct object, according to the choice of the writer. It usually does not agree when the object follows; and it nearly always does agree when the object is a personal pronoun preceding the verb.

Ex.: *La birra che aveva bevuto (or bevuta)*, the beer he had drunk.

*Ho veduto molte cose*, I have seen many things.

*Li ho trovati*, I have found them.

c. "To be," expressing a state or condition, is often rendered by *stare* (§2, 4), instead of *essere*. *Stare per* or *essere per* (followed by the infinitive) means "to be on the point of."

---

\* The use of *avére* with intransitive verbs must be learned by practice.

Ex. : *Sto bene*, I'm well ; *cóme sta*, how are you?  
*Stáva per uscire*, I was just going out.

d. English "am" (or "was") + the present participle, when expressing duration, is rendered either by the simple present (or imperfect) or by the same tense of *stáre*\* + the present participle ; when denoting futurity, it is translated by the future (or conditional), sometimes by the present (or imperfect).

Ex. : *Cammináva*, he was walking ; *státe lavorando*, you are working.  
*Leggevano* or *stávano leggendo*, they were reading.  
*Medito* or *sto meditando*, I am meditating.  
*Dice che verrà* (or *viene*), he says he is coming.  
*Disse che verrebbe*, he said he was coming.

e. A verb with the auxiliary "used to" (or "would" = "used to") is translated either by the simple imperfect, or by the infinitive with *solére*, "to be accustomed" (92, 14).

Ex. : *Vi andáva* (or *soltva andáre*) *ogni sera*, he used to go there every evening.

f. *Venire*, "to come" (92, 166), and *rimanére*, "to remain" (92, 16), are sometimes used as auxiliaries in the simple tenses of the passive, instead of *essere*. *Andáre*, "to go" (92, 1), is similarly used, but always implying duty or obligation.

Ex. : *I ládri vénnero arrestáti*, the thieves were arrested.  
*Rimáse sorprésa*, she was surprised.  
*Il fucile non va toccáto*, the gun mustn't be touched.

g. The English auxiliary "do" is not expressed in Italian.

Ex. : *Non viene*, he does not come.

h. "To have a thing done" is *far fáre una cosa* (92, 2).

Ex. : *Il re lo féce ammazzáre*, the king had him killed.

---

\* *Andáre* (92, 1) and *venire* (92, 166) are sometimes used instead of *stáre*.

**55.** The third person of the passive is very often replaced by the reflexive construction with *si*: as *si raccontò*, "it is related"; *questo libro si legge*, "this book is read"; *la spada che mi si diede*, "the sword that was given me"; *quelle cose si facevano*, "those things were done." Many writers always make the verb agree with its subject in number; but in popular speech the verb is nearly always in the singular when its subject follows (as if *si* were the subject of the verb, and the original subject were the object): as *si vedono* (or *véde*) *moltissime cose*, "many things are seen"; *non si può* (or *pòssono*) *leggere questi libri*, "these books can't be read." *Si* belonging to a dependent infinitive always goes with the main verb; see **48, a**.

The construction with *si* is generally used also to render the English indefinite "they" followed by a verb: as *si dice*, "they say." In this sense it is employed with neuter as well as with transitive verbs: as *si va spesso*, "people often go." See also **63, a**. In this construction an object pronoun may precede *si*: as *lo si fa*, "it is done."

**56.** Following are synopses of the compound tenses of transitive, neuter, reflexive, and passive verbs. In the paradigms given henceforth these forms will be omitted.

*a.* Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *trovare*, "to find," and *venire*, "to come":—

<i>Avère trováto</i> , to have found.	<i>Èssere venúto</i> , to have come.
<i>Avèndo trováto</i> , having found.	<i>Essèndo venúto</i> , having come.
<i>Ho trováto</i> , I have found.	<i>Sóno venúto</i> , I have come.
<i>Avèva trováto</i> , I had found.	<i>Èra venúto</i> , I had come.
<i>Èbbi trováto</i> , I had found.	<i>Fui venúto</i> , I had come.
<i>Avrò trováto</i> , I shall have found.	<i>Sarò venúto</i> , I shall have come.
<i>Avrèi trováto</i> , I should have found.	<i>Sarèi venúto</i> , I should have come.
<i>Abbia trováto</i> , I have found.	<i>Sia venúto</i> , I have come.
<i>Avèssi trováto</i> , I had found.	<i>Fòssi venúto</i> , I had come.

b. Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *alzarsi* ("to raise one's self"), "to get up," and *andarsene*,\* "to go away."

<b>Infinitive</b> PERFECT:	<i>Essersi alzato,</i>	<i>Essersene andato,</i>
<b>Participle</b> PERFECT:	<i>Essendosi alzato,</i>	<i>Essendosiene andato,</i>
<b>Indicative</b> PERFECT:	<i>Mi sono alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sono andato,</i>
PLUPERFECT:	<i>Mi era alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne era andato,</i>
PRETERITE PERFECT:	<i>Mi fui alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne fui andato,</i>
FUTURE PERFECT:	<i>Mi sarò alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sarò andato,</i>
<b>Conditional</b> PERFECT:	<i>Mi sarei alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sarei andato,</i>
<b>Subjunctive</b> PERFECT:	<i>Mi sia alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sia andato,</i>
PLUPERFECT:	<i>Mi fossi alzato.</i>	<i>Me ne fossi andato.</i>

c. Following is a synopsis of the entire passive of *amare*, "to love": —

<b>Infinitive</b> PRESENT:	<i>Essere amato,</i> to be loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Essere stato amato,</i> to have been loved.
<b>Participle</b> PRESENT:	<i>Essendo amato,</i> being loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Essendo stato amato,</i> having been loved.
<b>Indicative</b> PRESENT:	<i>Sono amato,</i> I am loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Sono stato amato,</i> I have been loved.
IMPERFECT:	<i>Era amato,</i> I was loved.
PLUPERFECT:	<i>Era stato amato,</i> I had been loved.
PRETERITE:	<i>Fui amato,</i> I was loved.
PRETERITE PERFECT:	<i>Fui stato amato,</i> I had been loved.
FUTURE:	<i>Sarò amato,</i> I shall be loved.
FUTURE PERFECT:	<i>Sarò stato amato,</i> I shall have been loved.
<b>Conditional</b> :	<i>Sarei amato,</i> I should be loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Sarei stato amato,</i> I should have been loved.
<b>Imperative</b> :	<i>Sii amato,</i> be loved.
<b>Subjunctive</b> PRESENT:	<i>Sia amato,</i> I am loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Sia stato amato,</i> I have been loved.
IMPERFECT:	<i>Fossi amato,</i> I were loved.
PLUPERFECT:	<i>Fossi stato amato,</i> I had been loved.

---

\* *Andarsene* is composed of the verb *andare*, "to go," the reflexive *si*, and the adverb *ne*, "thence" (see 47, a).

57. "May," "might," "can," "could" are generally rendered by the proper tense of *potére*; \* "must," "ought," "shall" = "must," "should" = "ought," by *dovére*; \* "will" and "would" expressing volition, by *volére*.\*

Ex.: *Può essere véro*, it may be true.

*Non potéva parlare*, he couldn't speak.

*Déve pagárló*, he must pay him, he shall pay him.

*Dovrébbe fárló*, he ought to do it, he should do it.

*Vóglio sapére*, I will know.

*Non vorréi anddre*, I wouldn't go.

No preposition intervenes between these verbs and the dependent infinitive.

Ex.: *Hánno potúto dormire*, they have been able to sleep.

*Potrémó partíre*, we shall be able to start.

*Dovémmo vénire*, we had to come.

*Dovréte trovárla*, you will have to find her.

*Vorrà torndre*, he will want to return.

*Vorréi sapére*, I should like to know.

These verbs are not defective, like the English modal auxiliaries; hence in Italian the tense is expressed by the auxiliary itself, and not by the dependent infinitive. To find the proper form of *potére*, *dovére*, or *volére*, replace "may," etc., by the correct tense of "to be able"; "must," etc., by "to be obliged"; "will," etc., by "to want" or "to like": as "I could have said it" = "I should have (*avréi*) been able (*potúto*) to say it (*dírlo*)" = *avréi potúto dírló*.

Ex.: *Avrébbe dovúto tacére*, he ought to have kept still.

*Aurémmo volúto restáre*, we would have stayed.

---

\* See 92, 21, 8, 19. The auxiliary of these verbs is regularly *avére*; but some writers use with them the auxiliary that belongs to the dependent infinitive: as *hánno potúto vénire* or *sóno potúti vénire*, "they have been able to come."

a. "Must" is also expressed by the impersonal verb *bisognare*, "to be necessary," followed by the infinitive or by *che*, "that," with the subjunctive. "To have to" is *avere da*.

Ex. : *Bisogna farlo*, it must be done.

*Bisogna che andiamo*, we must go.

*Ho da scrivere una lettera*, I have to write a letter.

b. "To be able" meaning "to know how" is *sapere* (see 92, 6). "Not to be able to help" doing a thing is *non poter a meno di non* (with infinitive) or *non poter fare a meno di* (with infinitive).

Ex. : *Non seppe farlo*, he couldn't do it.

*Sa leggere e scrivere*, he can read and write.

*Non potè a meno di non ridere*, he couldn't help laughing.

### EXERCISE 13.

Giorgetto è un bambino vispo, vispo. È sollecito; alle sette è già levato, ed è già andato nel giardino. È maggio, e il giardino è tutto fiorito; rose, gigli, viole mandano<sup>1</sup> un odore soave. Giorgetto si strugge<sup>2</sup> di cogliere i fiori; ma la mamma non vuole<sup>3</sup>: la mamma lo ha lasciato andar nel giardino, a patto che non cogliesse<sup>4</sup> i fiori. A un tratto Giorgetto vede<sup>5</sup> una rosa più bella di tutte le altre, non resiste<sup>6</sup> più al desiderio di pigliarla. La mamma non lo saprà,<sup>7</sup> non lo può<sup>8</sup> sapere, — dice<sup>9</sup> fra sé Giorgetto; e stende<sup>10</sup> la mano al cespuglio, ed è per coglierla. Ma che è stato? Ritira<sup>11</sup> lèsto la mano, e grida,<sup>12</sup> e piange.<sup>13</sup> La rosa ha le spine: il suo gambo nascosto tra bellissime foglie è tutto pieno di spine; e le spine gli hanno bucato tutta la mano. La mano è sanguinosa; e Giorgetto piange,<sup>14</sup> e la mamma ora si avvedrà<sup>14</sup> che il suo bambino è disobbediente.

<sup>1</sup> Send forth. <sup>2</sup> Is dying. <sup>3</sup> Is willing. <sup>4</sup> He should pick. <sup>5</sup> Sees. <sup>6</sup> Resists. <sup>7</sup> Will know. <sup>8</sup> Can. <sup>9</sup> Says. <sup>10</sup> Stretches out. <sup>11</sup> He draws back. <sup>12</sup> Screams. <sup>13</sup> Cries. <sup>14</sup> Will see.

## EXERCISE 14.

Silvio Pellico was<sup>1</sup> confined in prison; and there, in the silence of his<sup>2</sup> dungeon, he found<sup>3</sup> a friend, a companion—a spider. Yes, a spider made<sup>4</sup> his web in a corner of the prison, and Silvio did<sup>5</sup> not-destroy-it<sup>6</sup>; on-the-contrary,<sup>7</sup> he used-to-throw<sup>8</sup> him crumbs<sup>9</sup> of bread, and little by little he became-so-attached<sup>10</sup> to that spider, and the spider to him, that the creature used-to-come-down<sup>11</sup> from his web and go<sup>12</sup> to find Pellico,<sup>13</sup> and would-go<sup>12</sup> on his<sup>14</sup> hand and take<sup>15</sup> food<sup>9</sup> from his<sup>14</sup> fingers. One day the jailer removed<sup>16</sup> the unhappy Pellico. The prisoner thought-of<sup>17</sup> his spider, and said<sup>18</sup>: “Now that I am-going-away,<sup>19</sup> he will-come-back<sup>20</sup> perhaps, and will-find<sup>21</sup> the prison empty; or if there-is<sup>22</sup> somebody else here,<sup>23</sup> he may<sup>24</sup> be an enemy of spiders,<sup>9</sup> and tear down that beautiful web and crush the poor beast.”

<sup>1</sup> Preterite. <sup>2</sup> See 45, b. <sup>3</sup> Trovò. <sup>4</sup> Ficc. <sup>5</sup> See 54, g. <sup>6</sup> Not to-him it destroyed (*disficc*). <sup>7</sup> Anzi. <sup>8</sup> Buttava: see 54, c. <sup>9</sup> Def. art. <sup>10</sup> Tanto si affezionò. <sup>11</sup> Si movéva: see 54, e. <sup>12</sup> Andava. <sup>13</sup> See 13, e. <sup>14</sup> See 45, c. <sup>15</sup> Prendéva. <sup>16</sup> Mutò di stanza. <sup>17</sup> Pensò a. <sup>18</sup> Disse. <sup>19</sup> See 54, d: me ne vado. <sup>20</sup> Ritornerà. <sup>21</sup> Troverà. <sup>22</sup> Vi sarà. <sup>23</sup> Omit. <sup>24</sup> Potrebbe: see 57.

## REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS.

58. Italian verbs are divided into four conjugations, according as the infinitive ending is *-äre*, accented *-äre*, unaccented *-ere* (or *-rre*), or *-ire*. Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations are, however, inflected just alike.

a. The final *e* of the infinitive may be dropped before any word except one beginning with *s* impure.\*

\* Cf. 10, b; 14, b. Italians find it hard to pronounce three consecutive consonants of which the middle one is *s*.

**THE REGULAR VERB.**

59. *Parlâre*, "to speak," will serve as a model for the first conjugation. All compound tenses are omitted (see 56):—

**Infinitive and Participles.**

*Parlâre, parlândo, parlâto.*

**Indicative.**

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Parlo,</i>	<i>Parlâva,</i>	<i>Parlâi,</i>	<i>Parlerò,</i>
<i>parli,</i>	<i>parlâvi,</i>	<i>parlâsti,</i>	<i>parlerâi,</i>
<i>parla,</i>	<i>parlâva,</i>	<i>parlò,</i>	<i>parlerà,</i>
<i>parlâmo,</i>	<i>parlavâmo,</i>	<i>parlâmmo,</i>	<i>parlerêmo,</i>
<i>parlâte,</i>	<i>parlavâte,</i>	<i>parlâte,</i>	<i>parlerête,</i>
<i>parlano.</i>	<i>parlavano.</i>	<i>parlârôno.</i>	<i>parlerânno.</i>

**Imperative.****Subjunctive.****Conditional**

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Parli,</i>	<i>Parlâssi,</i>	<i>Parlerêi,</i>
<i>Parla,</i>	<i>parli,</i>	<i>parlâssi,</i>	<i>parlerêsti,</i>
	<i>parli,</i>	<i>parlâsse,</i>	<i>parlerêbbe,</i>
<i>parlâmo,</i>	<i>parlâmo,</i>	<i>parlâssimo,</i>	<i>parlerêmmo,</i>
<i>parlâte.</i>	<i>parlâte,</i>	<i>parlâte,</i>	<i>parlerêste,</i>
	<i>parlino.</i>	<i>parlâssero.</i>	<i>parlerêbbero.</i>

a. Verbs whose infinitives end in *-care* or *-gare* insert *h* after the *c* or *g* in all forms where those letters precede *e* or *i*: as *pâghi* (*pagâre*), "let him pay"; *cercherò* (*cercâre*), "I shall search." Verbs in *-ciare* and *-giare* drop the *i* before *e* or *i*: as *mangi* (*mangiâre*), "thou eatest"; *comincerà*\* (*cominciâre*), "he will

---

\* Some writers retain the *i* before *e*: as *comincierà*.

begin." But all other verbs in *-iare* drop the *i* only before another *i*: as *picchi* (*picchiare*), "let him strike"; *pigli* (*pigliare*), "thou takest"; but *picchierà*, *piglierà*.

*b.* The verbs *giocare*, *rotare*, *sonare* generally change *o* of the stem into *uo* in all forms where that vowel is accented: as *suoni*, "let him play"; *giuocano*, "they play." *Rinnovare* and *tonare* may make the same change. The *u* is sometimes used throughout.

**60.** Verbs of the second and third conjugations \* are inflected like *credere*, "to believe":—

### Infinitive and Participles.

*Credere*,      *credendo*,      *creduto*.

### Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>✓ Credo</i> ,	<i>Credéva</i> ,	<i>Credèi</i> ( <i>credètti</i> ),	<i>Crederò</i> ,
<i>credì</i> ,	<i>credévi</i> ,	<i>credèsti</i> ,	<i>crederài</i> ,
<i>créde</i> ,	<i>credéva</i> ,	<i>credè</i> ( <i>credètte</i> ),	<i>crederà</i> ,
<i>crediamo</i> ,	<i>credevamo</i> ,	<i>credèmmo</i> ,	<i>crederemo</i> ,
<i>credéte</i> ,	<i>credevate</i> ,	<i>credèste</i> ,	<i>crederete</i> ,
<i>credono</i> .	<i>credévano</i> .	<i>credèrono</i> ( <i>credèttero</i> ).	<i>crederanno</i> .

### Imperative.

### Subjunctive.

### Conditional

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Créda</i> ,	<i>Credèssi</i> ,	<i>Crederti</i> ,
<i>Crédi</i> ,	<i>créda</i> ,	<i>credèssi</i> ,	<i>crederèsti</i> ,
	<i>créda</i> ,	<i>credèsse</i> ,	<i>crederèbbe</i> ,
<i>crediamo</i> ,	<i>crediamo</i> ,	<i>credèssimo</i> ,	<i>crederèmmo</i> ,
<i>credéte</i> .	<i>crediate</i> ,	<i>credèste</i> ,	<i>crederèste</i> ,
	<i>crédano</i> .	<i>credèssero</i> .	<i>crederèbbero</i> .

\* Most grammars and dictionaries class these two together as the "second conjugation."

*Battere, compètere, convèrgere, divèrgere, lùcere, mescere, miètere, pascere, prùdere, ripètere, stridere, tessere, tondere,* and their compounds do not have in the preterite the forms in parentheses.

Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert after the *c* or *g* an *i* before the *u* of the past participle, but not before the *o* or *a* of the singular or third person plural of the present indicative or subjunctive: as *mescere*; *mésco, mésci, mésce, mesciámo, mescéte, méscono*; *mésca, etc., méscano; mesciúto*.

**61.** Most verbs of the fourth conjugation\* are inflected like *finire*, "to finish":—

#### Infinitive and Participles.

X *Finire,* *finendo,* *finito.*

#### Indicative.

X PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Finisco,</i>	<i>Finiva,</i>	<i>Finii,</i>	<i>Finirà,</i>
<i>finisci,</i>	<i>finivi,</i>	<i>finisti,</i>	<i>finirà,</i>
<i>finisce,</i>	<i>finiva,</i>	<i>finì,</i>	<i>finirà,</i>
<i>finidmo,</i>	<i>finivámo,</i>	<i>finimmo,</i>	<i>finirémo,</i>
<i>finite,</i>	<i>finiváte,</i>	<i>finiste,</i>	<i>finiréte,</i>
<i>finiscono.</i>	<i>finivano.</i>	<i>finirono.</i>	<i>finiranno.</i>

#### Imperative.

#### Subjunctive.

#### Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Finisca,</i>	<i>Finissi,</i>	<i>Finiréi,</i>
<i>Finisci,</i>	<i>finisca,</i>	<i>finissi,</i>	<i>finirésti,</i>
	<i>finisca,</i>	<i>finisse,</i>	<i>finirébbe,</i>
<i>finidmo,</i>	<i>finidmo,</i>	<i>finissimo,</i>	<i>finirémmo,</i>
<i>finite.</i>	<i>finidte,</i>	<i>finiste,</i>	<i>finiréste.</i>
	<i>finiscano.</i>	<i>finissero.</i>	<i>finirébbero.</i>

Though inflected like *finire* in all other parts, *dormire, fuggire,† pentire, sentire, servire, vestire* are always, *abor-*

\* Most grammars and dictionaries call this the "third conjugation."

† *Fuggire* inserts no extra *i* (see last sentence of 60).

*rtire*, *bollire*, and verbs in *-vertire* are generally, and *assorbire*, *inghiottire*, *mentire*, *nutrire*, *tossire* are often, in the present indicative, imperative, and subjunctive, conjugated after the model below. *Partire* and *sortire* are, when transitive, inflected like *finire*, when intransitive, like *sentire*.\*

Indicative.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.
<i>Sento,</i>		<i>Senta,</i>
<i>senti,</i>	<i>Senti,</i>	<i>senta,</i>
<i>sente,</i>		<i>senta,</i>
<i>sentidmo,</i>	<i>sentidmo,</i>	<i>sentidmo,</i>
<i>sentite,</i>	<i>sentite.</i>	<i>sentidte,</i>
<i>séntono.</i>		<i>séntano.</i>

62. The present participle of all verbs is invariable.

Ex.: *Stavámo parlándo*, we were speaking.

63. In all conjugations a form of the first person singular of the imperfect indicative ending in *o* instead of *a* is nearly always used in conversation, and occurs often in the works of modern authors: as *leggevo*, "I was reading."

a. In popular speech the first person plural of all tenses is generally replaced by the third person singular preceded by *si*: *nói áltri si créde*, "we believe"; *nói si éra venúti*, "we had come"; *ci si decise*, "we decided (ourselves)."

b. Final *o* of the third person plural is frequently omitted: as *parlan di lui*, "they speak of him." Forms in *-ánno* sometimes drop *-no*: as *dirán tútto*, "they will tell everything."

c. The imperfect indicative endings *-avámo*, *-aváte*, *-evámo*, *-eváte*, *-ivámo*, *-iváte* are often pronounced *-ávamo*, *-ávate*, etc.

d. Occasionally, especially in poetry, *-at-* is omitted from the ending of the past participle of the first conjugation: *destáto* = *déstato*.

---

\* Compounds are conjugated like their simple verbs.

**THE IRREGULAR VERB.**

**64.** Certain parts of Italian irregular verbs are always regular: the example given below will show which they are. *Essere* (see 53, a) is an exception to all rules.

**65.** Many irregular verbs that belong or once belonged to the third conjugation have the infinitive contracted (*fare* for *facere*, *dire* for *dicere*, *condurre* for *conducere*): in this case the future and conditional are formed from this contracted infinitive (*farò*, *dirò*, *condurrò*), while the present participle, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and preterite are formed from the uncontracted stem (*facendo*, *diceva*, *conduciamo*).

**66.** *Porre* (for *ponere*), "to put," a verb of the third conjugation, will serve to show which are the regular and which the irregular parts of irregular verbs: the forms printed in italics are regular in all verbs except *dare*, *dire*, *essere*, *fare*, *stare*; those in Roman type may be irregular.

**Infinitive and Participles.**

*Porre*,                      *ponendo*,                      *pósto*.

**Indicative.**

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Póngo</i> ,	<i>Ponéva</i> ,	<i>Pósi</i> ,	<i>Porrò</i> ,
<i>póni</i> ,	<i>ponévi</i> ,	<i>ponísti</i> ,†	<i>porrái</i> ,
<i>póne</i> ,	<i>ponéva</i> ,	<i>póse</i> ,	<i>porrà</i> ,
<i>poniámo</i> ,	<i>ponevámó</i> ,	<i>ponémmo</i> ,†	<i>porrémo</i> ,
<i>ponéte</i> ,*	<i>ponevátte</i> ,	<i>ponéste</i> ,†	<i>porréte</i> ,
<i>póngono</i> .	<i>ponévano</i> .	<i>pósero</i> .	<i>porráno</i> .

---

\* See 66, 4.

† See 66, 3.

Imperative	Subjunctive.		Conditional
	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	Pónge,	<i>Ponéssi,*</i>	Porrèi,
Póni,	pónge,	<i>ponéssi,</i>	porrésti,
	pónge,	<i>ponésse,</i>	porrèbbe,
poniámo,	poniámo,	<i>ponéssimo,</i>	porrémmo,
ponéte.	poniáte,	<i>ponéste,</i>	porréste,
	póngano.	<i>ponéssero.</i>	porrèbbero.

It will be seen that the present participle, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and preterite indicative are always regular.

(1) *Dàre* and *stàre* have in the future and conditional *darò*, *darèi*; *starò*, *starèi*. Otherwise the only irregularity in the future and conditional is that they are contracted in many verbs even when the infinitive is uncontracted: as *vedére*, "to see," *vedrò*; *veníre*, "to come," *verrèi*.

(2) From the first person singular of the preterite the other irregular persons can be constructed, the third person singular by changing the ending *i* to *e*, the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular.†

(3) The *regular* persons of the preterite and the whole imperfect subjunctive are slightly irregular in *dàre* and *stàre*, which substitute *e* for *a* in those forms (*désti*, *démmo*, *déste*, *déssi*; *stésti*, *stémmo*, *stéste*, *stéssi*).

(4) *Díre* (for *dícere*) and *fàre* (for *fácere*) have *díte* and *fáte* in the second person plural of the present indicative.

*a.* Verbs whose stem ends in *l*, *n*, or *r* often drop final *e* or *i* in the singular of the present indicative and imperative: as *non vuol andàre*, "he will not go"; *vièn qui*, "come here." See also 63, *a*, *b*, *c*.

\* See 66, 3.

† This rule applies only to *irregular* preterites.

*b.* The three forms of the imperative are exactly like the corresponding persons of the present indicative, except in *avère*, *sapère*, and *volère*, where they follow the subjunctive (*abbì, abbiàmo, abbiate; sappi, sappiàmo, sappiate; vogli, vogliàmo, vogliate*), and in *andàre, dàre, dire, fàre*, and *stàre*, which have in the singular *va', da', di', fa', sta'*.

*c.* The third person plural of the present indicative can always be constructed from the first person singular, from which can be formed also the whole present subjunctive except the first and second persons plural: these come from the first person plural of the present indicative. Exceptions to this rule are *andàre, avère, dàre, fàre, sapère*, and *stàre*, which have in the third person plural of the present indicative *vànno, hànno, dànno, fànno, sánno, stànno*; while *avère, dàre, sapère*, and *stàre* have in the present subjunctive *abbia, dia, sappia, stia*.

**67.** With the aid of the above notes any verb except *èssere* can be constructed from the infinitive, the participles (the present participle often being necessary to show the uncontracted form of the infinitive), the present indicative, and the first person singular of the preterite and future. A list of irregular verbs begins on page 88.

*a.* In general, compound verbs not differing in conjugation from their simple verbs will be omitted from this list. All compounds of *dàre* and *fàre* are accented on the same syllable as the simple verbs: as *fa*, "he does"; *disfà*, "he undoes."

The compounds of *stàre* demand special mention: *ristàre, soprastàre, sottostàre, sovrastàre* are inflected like *stàre* (*ristà soprastètti, sottostàno*); *distàre* has no present participle, is regular in the present of all moods (*disto*, etc.), but otherwise is inflected like *stàre* (*distètti*, etc.); *constàre, contrastàre, instàre, ostàre, prestàre, restàre, sostàre* are regular throughout (*cònstà, contrástano, instài, ostàrono, presterò, rèsti, sostàssi*).

**68.** In old Italian and in poetry both regular and irregular verbs differ in many ways from the normal types: some of the commonest variations are given below.

*a.* In the first and third persons singular and the third person plural of the imperfect indicative *v* is often dropped, but never in the first conjugation: *voléva* = *voléa* (also *volia*); *finivano* = *finiano*. Some of these forms are not uncommon in modern prose.

*b.* The conditional endings *-èi*, *-èbbe*, *-èbbero* are generally replaced in poetry by *-ta*, *-ta*, *-iano*: *crederti* = *credertià*.

*c.* The future endings *-ò*, *-anno* are sometimes replaced by *-aggio* or *-abbo*, *-aggiono* or *-abbono*: *amerò* = *ameraggio*; *ameranno* = *amerabbono*.

*d.* In the third person plural of the preterite *-no* or *-ono* is often dropped: *amàrono* = *amàro* or *amàr* (also *amòrno*, *amónno*). In the third person singular we find *amáo*, *credèo*, *sentìo*.

*e.* Final *-ero* is often replaced by *-ono*: *avrèbbero* = *avrèbbono*.

*f.* In the first person plural final *o* is often dropped, and then the *m* sometimes becomes *n*: *andiamo* = *andiám* or *andiàn*.

*g.* In the first person plural of the present indicative *-iám* may be replaced by *-ámo*, *-émo*, or *-ímo*, according to the conjugation.

*h.* Final *-iano*, wherever it occurs (also *-tano* in the imperfect), may be replaced by *-leno* or *-ièno*: *avévano* = *avièno*.

*i.* At the end of a word we often find *e* for *i*, sometimes *i* for *e*: *pènsi* = *pèlse*; *ascoltâte* = *ascoltâti*.

*j.* *E* is sometimes added to a word ending in an accented vowel: *amò* = *amòe*.

#### EXERCISE 15.

Tánto all' andàre quánto al tornàre dálla scuòla, Enríco dà<sup>1</sup> nõia a tútti; picchia i bambíni piú piccìni di lúi, tíra i sássì a quálche pòvero cáne che se ne va<sup>2</sup> tranquillaménte pel sùo viággio, rómpe le piánte del giardíno che dève<sup>3</sup> traversàre per andàre a scuòla o per tornàre a càsa; insómma è un contínuo far malánni.

Il bábbò va<sup>2</sup> a lavoráre la mattina prèsto ; la mámma è maláta, e quindi non lo pòssono<sup>4</sup> accompagnáre. L' áltra mattina però gli segui brútta. Méntre andáva a scuòla, víde<sup>5</sup> avánti a sè un bambino piccìno, tútto vestíto bène, e che paréva sólo ; Enrico, sénza far tánti discórsi, arríva di diètro, gli píglia il cappèllo e gliélc bútta in úna fònte che éra lì vicína. Il pòvero bambino si mette a piángere, e Enrico cominciò a scappáre. Ma quésta vòlta avéva fáttö<sup>6</sup> mále i suòi cónti : il bambino non éra sólo, lo accompagnáva un bel can barbóne. I can barbóni hánnò tánto intendíménto, che fánno<sup>6</sup> áltre còse ben più meraviglióse che andáre ad accompagnáre a scuòla un bambino. Il barbóne dúnque, cóme víde<sup>5</sup> il súo padroncínò assalíto, vía diètro ad Enrico che fuggíva in un áttimo lo raggiúnse,<sup>7</sup> e agguantátagli úna gámbe, lo badáva a mórdere<sup>8</sup> ; Enrico urláva, ma il cáné non lo lasciò finchè un signóre, che avéva vísto<sup>5</sup> tútta la scèna, non lo minacciò col bastóne. Enrico ebbe stracciáti i calzóni, laceráta la cárne déllé gámbe, e fu pòi punito dal maèstro e daí genitóri ; ma da que giòrno a quésta párté non dà<sup>1</sup> più nòia a nessúno, avéndo vedúto che un cáné stéssò gli avéva insegnáto cóme fósse mále molestáre gli áltri.

<sup>1</sup> From *ddre*, 92, 3. <sup>2</sup> *Anddre, anddrsene*, 92, 1. <sup>3</sup> *Dovére*, 92, 8. <sup>4</sup> *Potére*, 92, 21. <sup>5</sup> *Vedére*, 92, 10. <sup>6</sup> *Fáre*, 92, 2. <sup>7</sup> *Raggiungere*, 92, 138  
<sup>8</sup> He kept biting him.

#### EXERCISE 16.

Have you ever observed what<sup>1</sup> happens when a pot of water boils at the fire? The steam of the water rises like so-much smoke, and remains attached to the lid that covers the pot ; when this steam has begun to cool, it becomes<sup>2</sup> water once-more,<sup>2</sup> and falls<sup>3</sup> down again<sup>3</sup> drop by drop. In-like-manner<sup>4</sup> it happens with<sup>4</sup> the vapors which the sun and the heat lift from the earth. The vapors rise, collect themselves on<sup>5</sup> high in little bubbles, and thus united they form clouds.<sup>7</sup> When these clouds are very-much charged with<sup>6</sup> moisture, they resolve themselves into water ; and

the water, falling<sup>8</sup> down again<sup>3</sup> in drops where the wind carries it, forms rain.<sup>7</sup> So<sup>10</sup> rain<sup>7</sup> is-only<sup>11</sup> steam turned-back-into<sup>13</sup> water. The cloud, too,<sup>13</sup> is-only<sup>11</sup> a quantity of steam not-very<sup>14</sup> dense and not-very<sup>14</sup> high<sup>15</sup> in the air. This vapor, by<sup>16</sup> remaining low, prevents us sometimes from-seeing<sup>17</sup> objects<sup>7</sup> even at a<sup>16</sup> small distance from us.

<sup>1</sup> *Quello che.* <sup>2</sup> To become once more = *ritornare.* <sup>3</sup> To fall again = *ricadere.* <sup>4</sup> *Medesimamente.* <sup>5</sup> *Per.* <sup>6</sup> *In.* <sup>7</sup> See 13, b. <sup>8</sup> *Molto.* <sup>9</sup> *Di.* <sup>10</sup> *Dunque.* <sup>11</sup> *Non è altro che.* <sup>12</sup> *Torndto.* <sup>13</sup> *Pbi.* <sup>14</sup> *Poco.* <sup>15</sup> *Sollevato.* <sup>16</sup> Omit. <sup>17</sup> *Di vedere.*

## MOODS AND TENSES.

**69.** The English present participle used as subject, predicate nominative, or direct object of a verb must be rendered in Italian by the infinitive, nearly always preceded by the definite article.

Ex.: *Mi piace il viaggiare,* I like travelling.

*Rifarsela cogli animali è da sciocchi,* taking vengeance on animals is folly.

*La nostra prima cura fu il cercare una pensione,* our first care was hunting up a boarding-house.

*Odio lo studiare,* I hate studying.

**70.** The English present participle preceded by a preposition is translated as follows: (1) If the preposition is a necessary part of the thought, it is expressed in Italian, and the English present participle is rendered by the infinitive with the definite article. This article is, however, omitted (unless it would be used in English) after the prepositions *di*, "of"; *dopo di*, "after"; *invece di*, "instead of"; *prima di*, "before"; *senza*, "without."

Ex.: *Óltre il fàre scarabocchi scríve male*, besides making blots he writes badly.

*Parláí contra il trárre útile di quèlla disgrázia*, I spoke against utilizing that misfortune.

*Il vizio di fumàre*, the habit of smoking.

*Ho l' abitudine di coricàrmi tardi*, I am in the habit of going to bed late.

*Invòce di dirmi tutto*, instead of telling me everything.

*Prima di morire*, before dying.

*Parliàmo senza riflettere*, we speak without thinking.

(2) If in English the omission of the preposition, although it made the construction awkward, would not essentially change the meaning, the phrase is rendered in Italian by the present participle without any preposition.

Ex.: *Studiàndo si impàra*, (through) studying we learn.

*Dovrèi corrispòndere alla súa cortesia ascoltándola*, I ought to acknowledge her courtesy (by) listening to her.

*Partèndo incontrò un amico*, (on) going away he met a friend.

*Copiàndo non fa erróri*, (in) copying he makes no mistakes.

(3) "To amuse one's self by . . ." and "to weary one's self by . . ." are *divertirsi a . . .* and *affannarsi a . . .* with the infinitive: as *si diverte a tirar sassi*, "he amuses himself throwing stones." Some other verbs often take this construction.

71. Following are some other rules for the use of the infinitive and participles.

a. When any verb is used as an auxiliary, the mood and tense are expressed in that verb, and not in the dependent infinitive (see 57).

Ex.: *Avrèi potuto fàrlo*, I could have done it.

b. After *fàre*, "to make" or "to have" (= "to cause"), *sentire* and *udire*, "to hear," and *vedere* "to see," the Italian present

infinitive is used to render an English past participle. After *lasciare*, "to let," and often after the preposition *da* an Italian active infinitive is used to translate a passive one in English.

Ex. : *Si fa capire*, he makes himself understood.

*Farò fare un paio di scarpe*, I shall have a pair of shoes made.

*L'ho sentito dire*, I have heard it said.

*Lo vide ammazzare*, he saw him killed.

*Si lascia ingannare*, he lets himself be deceived.

*Non c'è niente da fare*, there is nothing to be done.

c. The Italian past participle is inflected like any other adjective. The present participle is invariable. When in English the present participle is used adjectively, without any verbal force whatsoever, it is translated, not by the participle, but by a verbal adjective, which can be formed from almost any Italian verb by changing the infinitive ending into *-ante* for the first conjugation, and into *-ente* for the others. This adjective may be used substantively. Some writers have used it as a participle.

Ex. : *Questi vasi sono rotti*, these vases are broken.

*La donna sta cucendo*, the woman is sewing.

*Stavano parlando*, they were speaking.

*Un animale parlante*, a speaking animal.

*Acqua bollente*, boiling water ; *due amanti*, two lovers.

d. A whole protasis is often expressed in Italian by a present participle, or by an infinitive with *a*.

Ex. : *Andandovi lo vedrebbe*, if he went there, he would see it.

*A bucarsi esce il sangue*, if you prick yourself, blood comes.

e. Writers sometimes use, instead of a clause in indirect discourse, an infinitive followed by the word that would have been subject of the clause.

Ex. : *Disse essere questo l'uomo che cercavamo*, he said this was the man we were looking for.

**72.** In negative commands the infinitive is always used instead of the second person singular of the imperative.

Ex.: *Trovalo*, find it; *non lo trovare*, do not find it.

**73.** When an action is represented as having taken place and still continuing, the English uses the perfect or pluperfect tense, the Italian the present or imperfect.

Ex.: *Studio l'italiano da otto mesi*, I have studied Italian for eight months.

**74.** In subordinate clauses referring to the future and introduced by a conjunction of time, where the present is often used in English, the future tense must be employed in Italian.

Ex.: *Quando vi andrò, glielo dirò*, when I go there, I'll tell him.

*a.* The future is often used, without any idea of future time, to express probability.

Ex.: *Sarà uscito*, he has probably gone out.

*Avrà molto denaro*, he probably has a great deal of money.

**75.** The difference between the imperfect and the preterite is this: the preterite is used of an event that occurred at a definite date in the past, the imperfect is used in a description or in speaking of an accessory circumstance or an habitual action in past time—the preterite is a narrative, the imperfect a descriptive tense. The preterite perfect is used (instead of the pluperfect) only after conjunctions meaning “as soon as” (*appena che, subito che, tosto che*), and sometimes after *dopo che*, “after.”\*

---

\* It is used also in phrases like: *in cinque minuti ebbe finita la lettera*.  
“in five minutes he had the letter finished.”

Ex. : *Entrò mentre dormivamo*, he came in while we slept.

*Faccio così ogni mattina*, I did so every morning.

*Lo fece l'anno scorso*, he did it last year.

*Tosto che l'ebbe visto, uscì*, as soon as he had seen it, he went

a. In conversation the perfect is often used instead of the preterite, when the event is not remote.

Ex. : *Vi sono andato ieri*, I went there yesterday.

**76.** The conditional, like the English "should" and "would," has two uses : in indirect discourse after a principal verb in a past tense it expresses the tense which in direct discourse would be future ;\* in the conclusion of a conditional sentence it is used when the protasis is (or, if expressed, would be) in the imperfect subjunctive (see **77**).

Ex. : *Disse che lo farebbe*, he said he would do it.

*Se fosse vero lo crederei*, if it were true, I should believe it.

*Questa casa mi converrebbe*, this house would suit me.

**77.** When a condition is contrary to fact, or consists of a more or less unlikely supposition referring to future time,† the protasis is in the imperfect (or pluperfect) subjunctive, the apodosis in the conditional ;‡ otherwise both protasis and apodosis are in the indicative.

Ex. : *Se l'avessi te lo darei*, if I had it, I should give it thee.

*Se fosse tornato l'avrei veduto*, if he had returned, I should have seen him.

*Se venisse noi ce ne andremmo*, if he came, we should go.

*Se vi andassi morirei*, if I should go there, I should die.

---

\* The perfect of the future or the conditional is sometimes used where the simple tense would be expected : *disse che non l'avrebbe fatto più*, "he said he would do it no more."

† Rendered in English by the imperfect, or by the auxiliary "should."

‡ The imperfect indicative is occasionally used to replace the imperfect or pluperfect subjunctive of the protasis and the conditional of the apodosis.

*Se non è véro è ben trováto*, if it isn't true, it's a good invention.  
*Se lo fece sará punito*, if he did it, he will be punished.

a. The missing persons of the imperative are supplied from the present subjunctive. The imperfect subjunctive is used to express a wish that is not likely to be realized.

Ex. : *Si accomodi*, be seated (sing.) ; *siano zitti*, be quiet (plur.).  
*Stia pure*, be it so ; *vengano subito*, let them come at once.  
*Fosse pure*, would it were so !

b. When a relative clause restricts its antecedent to one of all its possible conditions or actions, the verb of that relative clause is in the subjunctive, — the present subjunctive if the verb on which it depends be present or future, the imperfect if it be past or conditional.

Ex. : *Non c'è animale più bellno d'un gatto giovane che faccia il chissso*, there is no animal prettier than a kitten that is at play.  
*Dove troverete un giovine che sposi voi*, where will you find a young man who will marry you ?  
*Vorrei vedere un bel quadro che non fosse antico*, I should like to see a fine picture that is not old.

c. The verb of a subordinate clause depending on an impersonal verb, on a superlative, or on one of the words "first," "last," and "only" is in the subjunctive. This rule does not apply to reflexive verbs, nor to affirmative phrases meaning "it is true" or "it is because."

Ex. : *Bisogna ch'io vi andassi*, I had to go there.  
*È giusto che siano puniti*, it's right they should be punished.  
*Il più bello ch'io conosca*, the finest that I know.  
*Si vede che non è così*, you see it isn't so.  
*È véro che ci sono stato*, it's true that I've been there.

d. The subjunctive is used after all conjunctions meaning "although," "as if," "unless," "provided that," "in order that," "in such a way that" (denoting purpose), "before," "until" (referring to future), "whenever," "wherever," "without."

**Ex. :** *Benchè stia nascòsto, lo troverò, dovunque stia*, although he be hidden, I shall find him, wherever he is.

*Partirò a meno che egli non venga*, I shall go unless he comes.

*Lo fece perchè lo venissi*, he did it that I might come.

*La divise in modo che le due parti fossero uguali*, he divided it in such a way that the two parts should be equal.

*Aspetta finchè io torni*, wait until I return.

*e.* The subjunctive is used after the indefinite words and phrases *qualche*, *qualunque*, *chiunque*, *checcè*, *per quanto*.

**Ex. :** *Chiunque venga*, whoever comes.

*Qualunque disgrazia che succeda*, whatever misfortune happens.

*Per quante volte ci vada*, however many times I go there.

*Per quanto ricco egli sia*, however rich he may be.

*f.* The verb of an indirect question is nearly always in the subjunctive when it depends on a main verb either in a past tense or in the conditional.

**Ex. :** *Domandano se il re è morto*, they ask whether the king is dead.

*Domandò se il padre fosse uscito*, he asked whether his father was out.

*g.* In a clause dependent on a verb of saying the subjunctive is used if the main verb is negative, or interrogative, or in the conditional, or in a past tense. It is generally not used, however, after an affirmative verb in a past tense when the author himself wishes to imply that the indirect statement is true.

**Ex. :** *Dice che la cosa è chiarissima*, he says the thing is perfectly clear.

*Non dico che questo sia vero*, I don't say this is true.

*Dissero che lo zio fosse ammalato*, they said their uncle was ill.

*Gli dissi che mi chiamava Enrico*, I told him my name was Henry.

**h.** The subjunctive is used after verbs expressing causation, concession, desire, emotion, prevention, and uncertainty: *i.e.*, after verbs of bringing about; granting, permitting; commanding, hoping, requesting, wishing; fearing, regretting, rejoicing; forbidding, hindering; being ignorant, denying, disbelieving, doubting, expecting, pretending, supposing, suspecting, thinking. But *sperare*, "to hope," very often does not take the subjunctive.

Ex.: *Non so chi siano*, I don't know who they are.

*Vorrei che non fosse accaduto*, I wish it had not happened.

*Supponiamo che sia provato*, let us suppose that it is proved.

*Spero che verrà*, I hope he will come.

**i.** *Se*, "if," is occasionally omitted before an imperfect subjunctive; in this case the subject, if expressed, must follow the verb.

Ex.: *Sarei felice venisse egli*, I should be happy, should he come.

#### EXERCISE 17.

La mamma di Alfredo aveva lasciato un anello d'oro sul cassettone. Alfredo volle<sup>1</sup> metterselo in dito. Che giudizio! pretendere che l'anello della mamma possa<sup>2</sup> stare in un ditino d'un fanciullo! Se lo mise<sup>3</sup> nel dito grosso e poi s'affacciò alla finestra; l'anello cadde di sotto, e non se ne seppe<sup>4</sup> più nulla. La mamma cerca l'anello, ma non c'era più; cerca di qui, di là, di sopra, cerca per tutto, nè l'anello si può<sup>5</sup> trovare. Allora chiama Alfredo e gli dice<sup>6</sup>: — Bambino, dimmi<sup>6</sup> la verità; hai preso<sup>7</sup> tu il mio anello? l'hai perso<sup>8</sup> tu? — Alfredo, cattivo, disse<sup>9</sup> di no. La mamma si ricordava bene d'averlo lasciato nel vassoio sul cassettone. Non credeva Alfredo capace di dir le bugie, quindi sospettò che qualcuno l'avesse rubato. Ci andava in casa<sup>9</sup> una bambina, figliuola d'un antico suo servitore, e il sospetto cadde<sup>10</sup> sopra questa povera creatura. La mamma di Alfredo non la volle<sup>1</sup> più in casa; ma l'allontanò con bella maniera, e nessuno si avvide<sup>11</sup> di nulla, perchè quella signora era buona. Però la

bugia di Alfrédo féce<sup>12</sup> sì che súa mádre credésse ládra quélla pòvera bambína. Dio perdóni Alfrédo, Dio gl' ispiri di rimediàre a sì brútta azióne; váda,<sup>13</sup> si bútti ái piédi délla mámma, le raccònti tútto, e non commétta mái più di quése azionáce.

<sup>1</sup> From *volére*, 92, 19.    <sup>2</sup> *Polére*, 92, 21.    <sup>3</sup> *Méttere*, 92, 73.    <sup>4</sup> *Sapére*, 92, 6.    <sup>5</sup> *Dire*, 92, 164.    <sup>6</sup> *Dire*: see 48, d.    <sup>7</sup> *Préndere*, 92, 87.    <sup>8</sup> *Pèrdere*, 92, 83.    <sup>9</sup> There used to come to the house.    <sup>10</sup> *Cadére*, 92, 7.    <sup>11</sup> *Avvedérsi*, 92, 10.    <sup>12</sup> *Fàre*, 92, 2.    <sup>13</sup> *André*, 92, 1.

## EXERCISE 18.

We inhabit the earth ; but not all the earth has the same name everywhere : the earth is-divided<sup>1</sup> into five parts, and every part has its name. The five parts of the earth are-called<sup>1</sup> : Europe, Asia, Africa, America, Oceanica. Imagine you-cut-open<sup>2</sup> the earth in the middle and place<sup>3</sup> it on a table, in-such-a-way<sup>4</sup> that the inside shall-rest<sup>5</sup> on the table, and the outside shall-present<sup>5</sup> itself to your eyes. You will have two circles : in the circle that lies<sup>6</sup> at your right are<sup>7</sup> Europe, Asia, Africa, and a part of Oceanica ; in the circle that lies<sup>6</sup> on-the<sup>8</sup> left are<sup>7</sup> America and the other part of Oceanica. But the ancients did<sup>9</sup> not<sup>10</sup> believe that the earth was round, nor did<sup>9</sup> they know that its parts were five. They thought that the earth was flat and surrounded by the sea ; they knew, moreover,<sup>11</sup> only<sup>12</sup> three parts : Europe, Asia, Africa. They never<sup>13</sup> would have dreamed that the earth was round, and that on<sup>14</sup> the side opposite to the-one<sup>15</sup> which they inhabited there<sup>15</sup> was inhabited land. America was discovered 395 years ago by an Italian who was-called<sup>1</sup> Christopher Columbus. Christopher Columbus was-born<sup>17</sup> in a village near Genoa in 1447. His parents were poor ; his father earned hardly enough-to<sup>14</sup> support the family. However, by-dint<sup>18</sup> of sacrifices they had<sup>19</sup> him study ; and as<sup>20</sup> Christopher studied willingly, he grew up a fine<sup>21</sup> boy. When it was time<sup>22</sup> to-choose<sup>23</sup> a profession, he chose to-be-a<sup>24</sup> sailor. In<sup>8</sup> those times they believed that the world ended

after Africa ; but Columbus, on-the-contrary,<sup>25</sup> persuaded himself that the world ought<sup>26</sup> not<sup>10</sup> to<sup>28</sup> end there, and that by continuing to sail, one<sup>1</sup> ought<sup>28</sup> to<sup>28</sup> turn and come-back to the same point.

<sup>1</sup> See 55. <sup>2</sup> *Di aprire.* <sup>3</sup> *Di posare.* <sup>4</sup> *In mado.* <sup>5</sup> See 77, d. <sup>6</sup> Use *restare.* <sup>7</sup> *C'è.* <sup>8</sup> *A.* <sup>9</sup> See 54, g. <sup>10</sup> *Non*, "not," must precede the verb. <sup>11</sup> *Poi.* <sup>12</sup> See 82. <sup>13</sup> See 83. <sup>14</sup> *Da.* <sup>15</sup> *Quella.* <sup>16</sup> *Vì.* <sup>17</sup> To be born = *ndscere*, 92, 77. <sup>18</sup> *A forza.* <sup>19</sup> Use *fare*, 92, 2. <sup>20</sup> *Perchè.* <sup>21</sup> *Bravo.* <sup>22</sup> Use def. article. <sup>23</sup> *Di scagliere.* <sup>24</sup> *Di fare il.* <sup>25</sup> *Invice.* <sup>26</sup> See 57.

## CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND AD- VERBS.

### CONJUNCTIONS.

78. The principal conjunctions are :—

After, <i>dopo che.</i>	Granting that, <i>dato che.</i>
Also, <i>anche, pure.</i>	However (= nevertheless), <i>però, pure.</i>
Although, <i>benchè, sebbene, non ostante che.</i>	However (before an adj.), <i>qualunque, per quanto.</i>
And, <i>e.</i>	If, <i>se</i> (occasionally <i>quando, ove</i> ).
As, <i>come, quando</i> (after <i>tanto</i> ). <sup>c</sup>	In case, <i>caso.</i>
As (= since), <i>siccome, poichè.</i>	In order that, <i>perchè, acciòchè, affinché.</i>
As fast as, <i>via via che.</i>	Much less, <i>non che.</i>
As if, <i>come se, quasi.</i>	Neither . . . nor, <i>nè . . . nè.</i>
As long as, <i>finchè.</i>	Nevertheless, <i>tuttavia, nondimeno, però.</i>
As well as, <i>comeanco.</i>	Nor, <i>nè, nemmeno, neppure.</i>
Because, <i>perchè.</i>	Nor . . . either, <i>neppure.</i>
Before, <i>prima che, avanti che.</i>	Nor even, <i>neanche, neppure.</i>
Both . . . and, <i>e . . . e.</i>	Not to say . . . but even, <i>non che . . . ma.</i>
But, <i>ma.</i>	Or, <i>o, ovvero, ossia.</i>
Either . . . or, <i>o . . . o.</i>	Or else, <i>ossia.</i>
Even if, <i>anche se, ancorchè.</i>	Provided that, <i>purchè.</i>
Except that, <i>se non che.</i>	Rather, <i>anzi.</i>
For, <i>chè.</i>	Since (temporal), <i>dacchè.</i>

Since (causal), <i>poichè, siccome.</i>	Too, <i>pure, anche.</i>
So, <i>dunque, adunque.</i>	Unless, <i>a meno che non, eccetto che non, senza che.</i>
So that (result), <i>di modo che, sicchè.</i>	Until, <i>finchè non.</i>
So that (= in order that), <i>perchè.</i>	When, <i>quando.</i>
Than, <i>che.</i>	Whence, <i>dònde.</i>
That, <i>che.</i>	Where, <i>dòve, ove, là dove.</i>
That (= in order that), <i>perchè.</i>	Wherever, <i>dovunque.</i>
Then, <i>dunque.</i>	Whether, <i>se.</i>
Therefore, <i>dunque, però, perciò, adunque</i> (at the beginning of a clause).	While, <i>mentre, mentre che.</i>

The final vowel of *anche, che, dove, neppure, and ove* is generally elided before *e* or *i*.

a. Of the above conjunctions *acciochè, affinché, a meno che non, ancorchè, avanti che, benchè, caso, come se, dato che, dovunque, eccetto che non, non ostante che, perchè* meaning "in order that," *per quanto, prima che, purchè, qualunque, quasi, sebbene, and senza che* are followed by the subjunctive. For the use of *che*, "that," with the subjunctive, see 77, c, g, h. *Come* is occasionally used for *come se*, and then it takes the subjunctive. *Finchè* when referring to the future sometimes has the sense of *finchè non*, and then it generally takes the subjunctive. *Se* is followed by the subjunctive when it introduces an indirect question or statement dependent on a verb in a past tense, or a condition contrary to fact. *Quando* and *ove*, meaning "if," frequently take the subjunctive when *se* would not. — For examples, see 77, c, d, f, g, h.

b. *Che* cannot be omitted in Italian as "that" is in English: \* as *disse che fosse vero*, "he said it was true." *Se* can be omitted before an imperfect subjunctive: see 77, i.

---

\* It is omitted, however, in the following peculiarly Italian construction: *il ragazzo parèva fosse felice*, "the boy seemed to be happy"; that is, between a verb of seeming and the subjunctive dependent on it, when in English the construction would be a verb of seeming with a dependent infinitive. It is occasionally omitted also after verbs of wishing, hoping, and fearing: as *spéro mi scriva presto*, "I hope you will write to me soon."

c. *E* and *o* are often written *ed* and *od* before a vowel.

Ex.: *Mio pddre ed io*, my father and I.

d. Between a verb of motion and an infinitive "and" is rendered by the preposition *a*.

Ex.: *Andrà a cercarlo*, I'll go and look for it.

e. When *anche*, "also" or "too," relates to a personal pronoun, the disjunctive form of that pronoun must follow *anche*, even if some form of the same pronoun has already been expressed.

Ex.: *Andremo anche noi*, we shall go too.

*Parte anch' egli*, he goes away too.

*Trovi anche lui*, I found him too.

*Vennero anch' essi*, they came too.

*Lo o me lo diede anche a me*, he gave it to me too.

*Ti piace anche a te*, you like it too.

### PREPOSITIONS.

79. The principal prepositions are:—

About (= approximately), <i>circa</i> .	Before (place), <i>davanti a</i> , <i>innanzi</i> .
About (= around), <i>intorno a</i> , <i>attorno a</i> .	Behind, <i>dietro</i> .
Above, <i>sopra</i> .	Below, <i>sotto</i> .
According to, <i>secondo</i> .	Beside (place), <i>accanto a</i> .
After, <i>dopo</i> , <i>dopo di</i> .	Besides, beside (= in addition to) <i>oltre</i> .
Against, <i>contra</i> , <i>contro</i> .	Between, <i>fra</i> , <i>tra</i> .
Along, <i>lungo</i> .	Beyond, <i>oltre</i> , <i>al di là di</i> .
Among, <i>fra</i> , <i>tra</i> .	By, <i>da</i> , <i>accanto a</i> (= beside).
Around, <i>intorno a</i> , <i>attorno a</i> .	By means of, <i>per mezzo di</i> .
As far as, <i>fino a</i> , <i>sino a</i> .	During, <i>durante</i> .
As for, <i>per</i> , <i>quanto a</i> , <i>in quanto a</i> .	Except, <i>tranne</i> , <i>eccetto</i> , <i>fuori di</i> .
As to, <i>rispetto a</i> .	For, <i>per</i> .
At, <i>a</i> .	From, <i>da</i> , <i>fin da</i> .
Because of, <i>per motivo di</i> .	In, <i>in</i> .
Before (time), <i>prima di</i> , <i>innanzi</i> .	In front of, <i>davanti a</i> , <i>innanzi</i> .

Inside of, <i>déntro di</i> .	Round and round, <i>tórno tórno a</i> .
Instead of, <i>invece di</i> .	Since, <i>da</i> .
In the midst of, <i>in mézzo a</i> .	To, <i>a</i> .
Into, <i>in</i> .	Toward, <i>vérso</i> .
Near, <i>vicino a</i> .	Through, <i>per</i> .
Of, <i>di</i> .	Under, <i>sótto</i> .
On, <i>su</i> (before a vowel, <i>sur</i> ), <i>sópra</i> .	Upon, <i>su</i> (before vowels, <i>sur</i> ), <i>sópra</i> .
On this side of, <i>al di qua di</i> .	Up to, <i>fino a, sino a</i> .
On to, <i>su</i> (before vowels, <i>sur</i> ), <i>sópra</i> .	With, <i>con</i> .
Opposite, <i>dirimpètto a</i> .	Within, <i>fra, tra</i> .
Out of, <i>da, di, fuòri di</i> .	Within (= inside of), <i>déntro di</i> .
Outside of, <i>fuòri di</i> .	Without, <i>sénza</i> .
Over, <i>sópra</i> .	Without (= outside of), <i>fuòri di</i> .

When governing a personal pronoun *contra*, *diétro*, *dópo*, *sénza*, *sópra*, *sótto*, and often *fra* and *vérso* take *di* after them: as *sénza di me*, "without me"; *fra di lóro*, "among themselves." After *con*, *in*, *per*, a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i*\*: as *la stráda*, "the street"; *in istráda*, "in the street."

*a*. "To" before the name of a country, after a verb of motion, is *in*.

Ex.: *Andiámo in Fráncia*, let us go to France.

*b*. "To" before an infinitive is rendered in Italian as follows: (1) After the verbs *bastáre*, "suffice"; *bisognáre*, "need"; *convenire*, "suit"; *desideráre*, "desire"; *dovére*, "must," "ought"; *fáre*, "make"; *lasciáre*, "let"; *parére*, "seem"; *potére*, "can," "be able"; *sapére*, "know"; *sentíre*, "hear," "feel"; *solére*, "be accustomed"; *udíre*, "hear"; *vedére*, "see"; and *volére*, "wish," "to" before a following infinitive is omitted. It is omitted also in exclamations and indirect questions consisting only of an interrogative and an infinitive.

---

\* Cf. 58, *a*.

Ex. : *Dovrèi capire*, I ought to understand.

*Bisogna pensarci*, it is necessary to look out for it.

*Potrèmo venire*, we shall be able to come.

*Non sa che fare nè dove avvilgersi*, he doesn't know what to do nor where to turn.

(2) After verbs of accustoming, attaining, beginning, compelling, continuing, hastening, helping, inviting, learning, preparing, teaching, and after verbs of motion, "to" before a following infinitive is *a*.

Ex. : *Andranno a vederla*, they will go to see her.

*Si affrettò a rispondere*, he hastened to reply.

(3) After all other verbs it is *di*; but "to" denoting purpose or result is *per*, and "to" indicating duty or necessity is *da*.

Ex. : *Gli dissi di scrivere*, I told him to write.

*Mi è grato di dirlo*, I am happy to say so.

*Legge per divertirsi*, he reads to amuse himself.

*È troppo basso per arrivarci*, he's too short to reach it.

*Ho qualcheda da fare*, I have something to do.

c. "By" denoting the agent is *da*.

Ex. : *Fu fatto da lui*, it was done by him.

d. "In" is *in*; but when expressing future time it is *fra*.

Ex. : *Fra tre giorni sarà finito*, in three days it will be finished.

e. "For" is *per*: as *l' ha fatto per me*, "he has done it for me." But in the sense of "since," in speaking of past time, "for" is *da*. "For," meaning "during," is omitted or translated *durante*. Sentences like "it is right for him to do it" must be translated by *che* with the subjunctive: *è giusto che lo faccia*.

Ex. : *Dimora da molti anni a Firenze*, he has lived for many years at Florence (see 73).

*Resterà cinque settimane*, I shall stay for five weeks.

*Piovve durante un mese*, it rained for a month.

*Bisogna ch' io vada*, it is necessary for me to go.

f. "From" is *da*; but before adverbs and sometimes after verbs of departing it is *di*. In speaking of time it is generally *fin da*.

Ex.: *È lontano di qua*, it is far from here.  
*Esco di casa*, I go out of the house.  
*Fin dal principio*, from the beginning.

g. *Da* has, in addition to the meanings "by," "from," "since," another sense hard to render in English: it may be translated "as," "characteristic of," "destined for," "such as to," or "suited to," according to the context. *Da* means also "at the house of" or "to the house of." *Da* corresponds to English "on" or "at" before the word "side," *parte*, used in its literal sense.

Ex.: *Prometto da uomo d'onore*, I promise as a man of honor.  
*Il Salvini da Otello*, Salvini as Othello.  
*Sariste tanto buono da venire*, would you be so good as to come?  
*Questo è da sciocchi*, this is acting like a fool.  
*Il bambino ha un giudizio da grande*, the child has the judgment of a grown person.  
*La sala da pranzo*, the dining-room.  
*Una tazza da caffè*, a coffee-cup.  
*L'ho veduto dal Signor Neri*, I saw him at Mr. Neri's.  
*Viene da me*, he comes to my house.  
*Da questa parte*, on this side.

h. *A* is often used before a noun — not indicating material (which is expressed by *di*) nor purpose (expressed by *da*) — that describes another noun, when in English these two substantives would form a compound word.

Ex.: *Una macchina a vapore*, a steam-engine.  
*Una sedia a dondolo*, a rocking-chair.  
*Uno sgabello a tre piedi*, a three-legged stool.

i. *Essere per* or *stare per* means "to be about to."

Ex.: *Stava per parlare*, he was on the point of speaking.

*j.* In some idiomatic phrases *di* is used in Italian when another preposition would be employed in English.

Ex. : *Di giorno, di notte*, by day, by night.

*Essere contento di una cosa*, to be satisfied with a thing.

*Vivo di pane*, I live on bread.

*Che faceva delle forbici*, what did he do with the scissors?

### ADVERBS.

**80.** (1) Adverbs, unless they begin the clause, are generally placed immediately after the verb; *non*, however, always precedes the verb. When a compound tense is used, the adverb nearly always follows the past participle, but *già*, *mai*, *più*, and *sempre* usually precede it. See also **84**. *Non* precedes a conjunctive and follows a disjunctive pronoun.

Ex. : *Non ci vado mai*, I never go there.

*Ho parlato spesso*, I have often spoken.

*Non ha sempre parlato così*, he hasn't always talked so.

*Io non lo vedo*, I don't see him.

(2) Adverbs are compared like adjectives (see **31**) ; but "better," "worse," "more," "less" are respectively *méglio*, *péggio*, *più*, *méno*.

**81.** "Yes" is *sì* or *già* : *sì* when it expresses real affirmation, *già* when it denotes passive assent. "No" is *no*. "Not" is *non*, after which a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i*. "Or not" at the end of a clause is *o no* : as *sia véro o no*, "whether it be true or not."

Ex. : *Le piúce ? — Sì.* — "Do you like it ?" "Yes."

*Che tempaccio ! — Già.* — "What nasty weather !" "Yes."

*Sta bene*, he is well ; *non istà bene*, he isn't well.

a. "What?" meaning "what do you say?" is *cóme?* *Che* and the interjection *o* are often used to introduce questions.

Ex.: *O perchè non rispondíte? — Cómè? — Che siltè sordo, signóre?*  
— "Why don't you answer?" "What?" "Are you deaf, sir?"

b. "Very" is *mólto* (see, however, 35, a). Instead of using a word or suffix for "very," the Italians often repeat the emphasized adjective or adverb.

Ex.: *È mólto bello* or *è bellissimo*, it is very beautiful.  
*I subì genitóri erano pòveri pòveri*, his parents were very poor.

82. "Only" may be translated by the adverb *sólo*, *sol-tánto*, or *solaménte*; or by the adjective *sólo*. When it modifies anything but a verb, it is often rendered by *non . . . che*, with the whole verb intervening, and with the word modified by "only" immediately after *che*.

Ex.: *Non ne ho compráto che due*, I have bought only two of them.

83. "Never" is *non . . . mái*, with the inflected part of the verb intervening. "Just," as an adverb of time, is *or óra*. "Early" is *prèsto*, *per témpo*, or *di buon' óra*. "This morning" is *stamáne*; "last night" is *stanótte*. "The day after to-morrow" and "the day before yesterday" are respectively *domán l' áltro* and *ier l' áltro*. "A week, a fortnight from to-day" are *óggi a ótto*, *a quíndici*. "Ago" is translated by *fa*, which follows the substantive of time; if this substantive is plural, "ago" may be rendered also by *sóno* (*erano* or *saránno* if the date from which time is counted be past or future).

Ex.: *Non ti ha mái vedúto*, he has never seen thee.

*Son arriváti or óra*, they have just arrived.

*Tre ánni fa*, three years ago; *quáttro giòrni sóno*, four days ago.

Ex.: *Lunedì erano due settimane*, two weeks ago Monday.  
*Domani saranno cinque mesi*, five months ago to-morrow.

84. "Here" and "there" when they denote a place already mentioned, and no particular stress is laid upon them, are *ci* and *vi*, which are often used in Italian when they would be superfluous in English; "there is," "there are," etc., are *c'è* or *vi è*, *ci sono* or *vi sono*, etc. (sometimes *vi ha*). *Ci*, *vi*, and also *ne*, "thence," occupy the same positions with regard to the verb, and undergo the same changes, as the pronouns *ci*, *vi*, *ne* (48, 50); they precede conjunctive pronouns beginning with *l* or *n*, and follow all others: *ce lo manda*, *ti ci mando*.

When emphasized, "here" is *qui* or *qua*, "there" indicating a place near the person addressed is *costì* or *costà*, and "there" denoting a point remote from both speaker and hearer is *lì* or *là*.

Ex.: *Carlo vi è tornato*, Charles has gone back there.  
*Alla scuola non ci vado*, I don't go to school.  
*Voi rimanete costà, egli resterà laggiù, ed io non partirò di qui*, you will remain where you are, he will stay down there, and I shall not move from here.

a. "Here I am," "here it is," etc., are *eccomi*, *eccolo*, etc.

85. Most adverbs of manner are formed by adding *-mente* to the feminine singular of the corresponding adjective. Adjectives in *-le* and *-re* drop their final *e* in forming the adverb. See 35, a.

Ex.: *Franco*, frank; *francamente*, frankly.  
*Felice*, happy; *felicemente*, happily.  
*Piacevole*, pleasant; *piacevolmente*, pleasantly.

a. "So" meaning "it" is translated *lo*: as *lo faccio*, "I do so"; *lo crede*, "he thinks so"; *lo dicono*, "they say so."

## EXERCISE 19.

Agostino è un goloso di prima ríga. Còme<sup>1</sup> vedéva déi confètti, úna chicca, délle frúttà, súbito se le pigliáva e mangiáva sénza perméssò, ánche se non érano sùe. Infíno i suòi compágni di scuòla lo rimproverávano di quèsto viziáccio. La maèstra pensò di puníre Agostino. Un giòrno, quándò fu l' óra délla ricreazíone, tirò fuòri dállà súa cassétta de' confètti, e metténdoli nel panière d' Agostino, gli disse<sup>2</sup>: — Quèsti li porterai a càsa álla túa sorellína. — Agostino a vedér que' confètti féce<sup>3</sup> cèrti occhióni gròssi còme quèlli d' un bòve. Non istáva più in sè<sup>4</sup> dállà vòglia di mangiàre que' confètti. Éra tánto goloso, che se avéva qualcòsa di sùo non dáva nùlla a nessúno; éra tánto goloso, che avéva la sfacciatággine di mangiàre le còse dégli áltri; o figurátevi dúnque còme si struggéva di<sup>4</sup> mangiàr que' confètti ch' érano nel sùo panieríno. Finíta la refezióne, i bambíni vánno<sup>5</sup> nel giardíno. Appéna Agostino véde che nèlla stánza dov' érano i panieríni non c' éra nessúno, sparísce dal giardíno, e vía a pigliàre i confètti. Ma non ha finíto di buttár giò il primo, che<sup>1</sup> sènte un amáro, un sapóre cosí cattivo da non poté règgere; spúta e rispúta, ma l' amáro non se ne andáva.<sup>5</sup> Éra curiosó vedér Agostino disperáto per quel saporáccio. E i compágni chi da un úscio, chi da un áltro, e chi dállà finèstra che dáva sul giardíno, stávano a vedérlo, e a rídere di quèsta cèlia che la maèstra avéva fáto<sup>6</sup> a quel goloso. Allóra la maèstra gli disse<sup>2</sup>: — Védi, Agostino; ho fáto<sup>6</sup> fáre quèsti confètti pièni d' assénzio appòsta per te; védi a che còsa pòrta l' ingordigia! Un áltro bambíno non ci sarèbbe rimásto a<sup>7</sup> quèsta cèlia. — Agostino si accòrse<sup>8</sup> che la signóra maèstra gli avéva fáta<sup>6</sup> quèsta cèlia per sùo bène, e che se non si correggéva diventáva lo zimbèllo di tútti.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> When. <sup>2</sup> Dire. <sup>3</sup> He was beside himself. <sup>4</sup> He was dying to. <sup>5</sup> Andáre, andársene. <sup>6</sup> Fáre. <sup>7</sup> Wouldn't have been taken in by. <sup>8</sup> Accòrgersi. <sup>9</sup> See footnote (†) on p. 69.

## EXERCISE 20.

It is related that in by-gone<sup>1</sup> times a parrot escaped from a villa. This parrot had learned to say all-the-time<sup>2</sup>: "Who's-there<sup>3</sup>? who's-there<sup>3</sup>?" Having-fled<sup>4</sup> into a wood, it was flying from one tree to another without knowing where to go. A peasant, who by chance was hunting<sup>5</sup> in that place, eyed the parrot, and having never seen any<sup>18</sup> birds before<sup>6</sup> of this sort, he was<sup>7</sup> amazed-at-it,<sup>8</sup> and took<sup>9</sup> all-possible<sup>10</sup> care to aim straight with his gun, so-as-to shoot-it<sup>11</sup> and carry it to show off as a rare thing. But while the peasant was aiming, the parrot, seeing<sup>4</sup> him, repeated his usual question: "Who's-there<sup>3</sup>? who's-there<sup>3</sup>?" The-peasant's-blood-froze-in-his-veins<sup>12</sup> at those words; and lowering<sup>4</sup> his gun, and taking-his-hat-from-his-head<sup>13</sup> he hastened to reply to him, dreadfully<sup>14</sup> mortified: "Excuse-me,<sup>15</sup> for-mercy's-sake,<sup>16</sup> I took<sup>17</sup> you for a bird!"

- <sup>1</sup> *Andditi.* <sup>2</sup> Always. <sup>3</sup> *Chi c'è.* <sup>4</sup> Past participle. <sup>5</sup> *A caccia.* <sup>6</sup> *Per P innanzi.* <sup>7</sup> *Rimase:* see 54, f. <sup>8</sup> *Ne.* <sup>9</sup> Gave himself. <sup>10</sup> *Ogni.* <sup>11</sup> *Tirargli.* <sup>12</sup> To the peasant not remained blood in-him (*addosso*). <sup>13</sup> *Levdosi di capo il cappello.* <sup>14</sup> *Tutto.* <sup>15</sup> *La scusi.* <sup>16</sup> For charity. <sup>17</sup> Had taken. <sup>18</sup> Omit.

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

**86.** "One," "people," "we," "you," "they," used in an indefinite sense, are rendered in Italian by the reflexive construction with *si* (see 55).

**Ex.:** *Si canta bene in Italia,* they sing well in Italy.

*Si fa così,* you do this way; *se ne parla,* people speak of it.

*Si fanno spesso queste cose,* one often does these things.

87. "All" as a substantive is *tutto* (*tutti*, etc.): as *tacé- vano tutti*, "all were silent." The adjective "all," "the whole" is *tutto* followed by the definite article: as *tutta la terra*, "the whole earth"; *tutto il giorno*, "all day"; *tutte le romane son belle*, "all Roman ladies are beautiful."

88. "Any," when it really adds nothing to the sense, is omitted: as *non ha libri*, "he hasn't (any) books"; *volète vino*, "do you want (any) wine?" When, however, this redundant "any" might be replaced by "any of the," it is translated by the partitive genitive (see 12, a): as *volète del vino*, "do you want any (of the) wine?"

"Any" used substantively in the sense of "any of it," "any of them" is *ne* (see 47, 3): as *non ne ho*, "I haven't any"; *non ne ha più*, "he hasn't any more"; *ne avéte*, "have you any?"

"Any" used adjectively and meaning "any whatsoever" is *qualunque*: as *lo fa meglio di qualunque altra persona*, "he does it better than any other person."

89. "Some," when it adds nothing to the sense, is omitted or rendered by the partitive genitive: as *volète burro* or *volète del burro*, "will you have some butter?"

"Some" meaning "some of it," "some of them" is *ne*: as *ne ha*, "he has some."

Otherwise "some" is *alcuno* or *qualche*. *Qualche* is always singular (even when the meaning is plural), and is never used substantively. Ex.: *alcune persone* or *qualche persona*, "some persons"; *alcuni lo dicono*, "some say so."

90. "Some . . . others," "the one . . . the other," "one . . . another" are translated by *chi . . . chi*, *altri . . . altri*, *l' uno . . . l' altro*, or *alcuni . . . alcuni*.

*Alcuni* used in this way is always plural. A verb whose subject is *chi* or *altri* (used in this sense) is always singular; *altri* is not used after prepositions. But *l' uno* and *l' altro* can be used in any case or number.

Ex.: *Tutti, chi più tosto, e chi meno, muoiono*, all died, some sooner, some later.

*Altri caddero, altri fuggirono*, some fall, others flee.

*Gli uni son buoni, gli altri cattivi*, some are good, others bad.

91. Following is a list of some other indefinite pronouns and adjectives:—

Anybody, <i>qualcuno, qualcheduno, chiunque</i> , pronouns.	Neither, <i>non . . . l' uno nè l' altro, nè l' uno nè l' altro</i> , pron. or adj.
Any more, <i>più, ne . . . più</i> , pron.*	No, <i>non . . . nessuno, non . . . alcuno</i> , adj.
Anything, <i>qualcheduno</i> , pron.	Nobody, <i>non . . . nessuno</i> , pron.
Anything else, <i>altro</i> , pron.	No more, <i>non ne . . . più</i> , pron., <i>non . . . più</i> , adj.
Both, <i>tutti e due, l' uno e l' altro, ambedue</i> , pron. or adj.	None, <i>non ne . . .</i> , pron.
Certain, <i>certo</i> , adj.	Nothing, <i>non . . . niente, non . . . nulla</i> , pron.
Each, <i>ogni, ciascuno, ognuno</i> , adj.	Nothing else, <i>non . . . più niente, non . . . più nulla</i> , pron.
Either, <i>l' uno o l' altro</i> , pron. or adj.	Others, <i>altri</i> (see 91, d), pron.
Every, <i>ogni, ciascuno, ognuno, ciascheduno</i> , adj.	Several, <i>parecchi</i> (fem. <i>parecchie</i> ), pron. or adj.
Everybody, <i>tutti</i> (pl.), <i>ciascheduno, ciascuno, ognuno</i> , pron.	Somebody, <i>qualcheduno, qualcuno</i> , pron.
Everything, <i>tutto</i> , pron.	Something, <i>qualcheduno</i> , pron.
Few, a few, <i>pochi</i> (pl.), pron. or adj.	Such, <i>tal</i> , adj.
However much, (or many), <i>per quanto</i> (-ti), adj.	Such a, <i>un tale</i> , adj. (but also pron. in Ital., meaning "so-and-so").
Little, <i>poco</i> , pron. or adj.	Whatever, <i>qualunque</i> (invariable), adj.
Less, <i>meno</i> , pron. or adj.*	
Many, <i>molti</i> , pron. or adj.†	
More, <i>più</i> , pron. or adj.	
Much, <i>molto</i> , pron. or adj.	

---

\* "Less" = "smaller" is *più piccolo*. † "A great many" is *moltissimi*.

a. The verb used with *nessúno*, *alcúno*, *niènte*, *núlla* (meaning "no," "nobody," "nothing") must be preceded by *non*, "not," unless this pronoun or adjective precedes the verb.

Ex.: *Non ho visto nessúno*, I have seen nobody.

*Nessún pópolo lo possiède*, no people possesses it.

b. "Nothing" followed by an adjective is *niènte di*.

Ex.: *Non avètte niènte di buòno*, you have nothing good.

c. *Ciascúno*, *ciaschedúno*, *ognúno*, *nessúno*, and *alcúno* when used adjectively are inflected like *úno* (see 14, 15).

d. *Altrúi*, "another," "others," "our neighbor," is invariable, and is not used as subject of a verb: as *con altrúi*, "with other people"; *chi áma altrúi áma sè stésso*, "he who loves his neighbor loves himself." The prepositions *di* and *a* are sometimes omitted before it: as *la móstro altrúi*, "I point her out to others"; *la vòglia altrúi*, "the will of another."

#### EXERCISE 21.

Per mutàre<sup>1</sup>! Riccárdo díce<sup>2</sup> mále di qualchedúno. Che brútto vízio è mái quéllo! A sentír Riccárdo, tútti son ásiní, tútti sóno cattívi; di buòni e di brávi non c'è che lúi. Ma ora-mái ognúno ha conosciúto di che pánni vèste,<sup>3</sup> e nessúno gli créde più. Se fósse brávo e buòno, si guarderèbbe dal dir mále di quèsto e di quéllo, ánche quándo ne avésse quálche ragióne. Figurátevi, dúnque, se può<sup>4</sup> éssere buòno e brávo lúi che díce mále di tútti! Sòrte, ripèto, che nessúno gli créde più, e quándo si sènte dir mále di qualchedúno, e si sa<sup>5</sup> che c'è Riccárdo di mèzzo,<sup>6</sup> ognúno si affrètta a rispóndere: Se l' ha détto<sup>2</sup> quel maldicènte di Riccárdo, non è véro núlla dicèrto.

<sup>1</sup> There he is at it again! <sup>2</sup> *Dire*. <sup>3</sup> What sort of a fellow he is. <sup>4</sup> *Potére*. <sup>5</sup> *Sapére*. <sup>6</sup> At the bottom of it.

## LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

Arranged according to Conjugation.\*

**92.** This list contains no compound verbs except those which differ in conjugation from their simple verbs and those for which no simple verb exists in Italian. With every verb its irregular forms are given: in the same line with the infinitive are the present participle (if it be needed to show the original form of the infinitive), the first person singular of the preterite indicative, the past participle, and the first person singular of the future indicative (if the future be contracted); immediately below are the present indicative, the imperative, and the present subjunctive, if these parts be peculiar. For *dare* and *stare* the whole preterite and the first person singular of the imperfect subjunctive are given also. *Essere* is irregular throughout. *All tenses not mentioned are regular.* For peculiar *endings*, see **63, 68**. Note the following rules:—

*a.* If the *present participle* is given, the following forms, unless expressly mentioned, are to be constructed from its stem: all *preterite forms with accented endings*, and the whole *imperfect indicative* and *subjunctive*. E. g. *fare*, pres. part. *facendo*: hence pret. 2d sing. and 1st and 2d pl., *facesti, facemmo, faceste*; imp. ind., *faceva*, etc.; imp. subj., *faceSSI*, etc.

If the present participle is not given, these forms, unless they be mentioned, are to be constructed from the stem of the infinitive. E. g. *venire*: pret. *venisti, venimmo, veniste*; imp. ind. *veniva*; imp. subj. *venissi*.

*b.* Preterites in *-di, -ti, -li*, and *-etti* (except *detti* and *stetti*) are

---

\* Reference to these tables is facilitated by an Alphabetical List of Irregular and Defective Verbs (see page 101). Students are advised not to learn forms in parentheses nor any verbs or forms marked *rare* or *poetical*.

regular throughout. In all *other* preterites the third person singular can be formed from the first person by changing final *i* to *e*, and the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular. E. g. *fáre*, pret. *féci*: 3d sing. *féce*, 3d pl. *fécero*.

*c.* If the future is not given, it is to be constructed from the infinitive. The conditional always has the same stem as the future. See 65, p. 60.

*d.* The imperative, when not given, is like the corresponding forms of the present indicative. See 66, *b*, top of p. 62.

### FIRST CONJUGATION.

#### 1. Andáre, *go*, andái, andáto; andrò (anderò).

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Vádo <i>or</i> vò,	andíamo,	Va',	Váda,	andíamo,
vái,	andáte,	andíamo,	váda,	andíate,
va,	vánno.	andáte.	váda,	vádano.

2. *Fáre*, *do*, *facéndo*, *féci*,\* *fátto*; *farò*. *Fáre* (*formerly also facere*) was originally a verb of the third conjugation: see 92, *a*.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Fáccio <i>or</i> fò,	facciámo,	Fa',	Fáccia,	facciámo,
fái,†	fáte,	facciámo,	fáccia,	facciáte,
fa,†	fánno.	fáte.	fáccia,	fácciano.

#### 3. Dáre, *give*, dièdi *or* dètti, dáto; darò. *Imp. subj.* déssi.

PRES. IND.	PRET. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Dò,	Dièdi <i>or</i> dètti,		Día,
dái,	désti,	Da',	día,
dà,	diède <i>or</i> dètte,‡		día,
diámo,	démmo,	diámo,	diámo,
dáte,	déste,	dáte.	diáte,
dánno.	dièdero <i>or</i> dèttero.‡		díano <i>or</i> díeno.

\* In poetry we sometimes find a preterite *fèi*, *fèsti*, *fè* or *fèo*, *fémmo*, *fèste*, *fèrono* or *fénno*; and an imp. ind. *fèa*, etc.

† Also *fáci*, *fáce*.

‡ Also *diè*, sing.; *dièr* or *dièro* or *dièrono*, pl.

4. Stàre (67, a), *stand*, stètti, státo; starò. *Imp. subj.* stéssi.

PRES. IND.	PRET. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Stò,	Stètti,		Stía,
stái,	stésti,	Sta',	stía,
sta,	stètte,		stía,
stiámo,	stémmo,	stiámo,	stiámo,
státe,	stéste,	státe.	stiáte,
stánno.	stëttero.		stíano or stíeno.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

5. Avére, *have*, èbbi, avúto; avrò. *See* 53, b.\*6. Sapére, *know*, sèppi, sapúto; saprò.

PRES. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Sò, sappiámo,	Sáppi,	Sáppia, sappiámo,
sái, sapéte,	sappiámo,	sáppia, sappiáte,
sa, sánno.	sappiáte.	sáppia, sappiano.

7. Cadére, *fall*, cáddi, cadúto; cadrò.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Cádo (cággio), cadiámo (caggiámo),	Cáda (cággia), cadiámo (caggiámo),
cádi, cadéte,	cáda (cággia), cadiáte (caggiáte),
cáde, cádono (caggiono).	cáda (cággia), cádano (caggiano).

8. Dovére, *owe*, dovéi (dovètti), dovúto; dovrò. *Imperative lacking.*

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Dèvo (dèbbo or dèggio),	Dèbba (dèva or dèggia),
dèvi (dèbbi),	dèbba (dèva or dèggia),
dève (dèbbe),	dèbba (dèva or dèggia),
dobbiámo (deggiámo),	dobbiámo,
dovéte,	dobbiáte,
dèvono (dèbbono or dèggiono).†	dèbbano (dèvano or dèggiano).

\* In poetry we find: *aggio, dabbo*, or *dio* for *ho*; *dve* for *ha*; *aggia* or *dia* for *abbia*; *èi* for *èbbi*; a future *avrò*, etc., or *averò*, etc., and similar forms in the conditional.

† Also *dèo, dèi, dèe, dovèmo, dovéte, dèono* or *dènno*.

9. Sedére, *sit*, sedéi or sedétte, sedúto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Siêdo or sêggo,	sediâmo (seggiâmo),	Siêda or sêgga,	sediâmo (seggiâmo),
siêdi,	sedéte,	siêda or sêgga,	sediâte,
siêde,	siêdono or sêggono.	siêda or sêgga,	siêdano or sêggano.

10. Vedére, *see*, vídi, vedúto or vísto; vedrò. Provvedére *has a future* provvederò; prevedére *has* prevederò or prevedrò. *All other compounds are like* vedére.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Védo (véggo or véggio),		Vêda (végga or véggia),	
védi,		vêda (végga or véggia),	
vêde,		vêda (végga or véggia),	
vediâmo (veggiâmo),		vediâmo (veggiâmo),	
vedéte,		vediâte (veggiâte),	
vêdono (véggono or véggiano).		vêdano (véggano or véggiano).	

11. Giacére, *lie*, giácqui, giaciúto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Giáccio,	giacciâmo,	Giáccia,	giacciâmo,
giáci,	giacéte,	giáccia,	giacciâte,
giáce,	giácciono.	giáccia,	giácciano.

12. Piacére, *please: like* giacére (11).

13. Tacére, *be silent: like* giacére (11).

14. Solére, *be wont, sôlito. No pret., fut., cond., nor imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Sôglio,	sogliâmo,	Sôglia,	sogliâmo,
suôli,	soléte,	sôglia,	sogliâte,
suôle,	sôgliono.	sôglia,	sôgliano.

15. Dolére, *grieve*, dôlsi, dolúto; dorrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Dôlgo (dôglio),	dogliâmo,*	Dôlga (dôglia),	dogliâmo,*
duôli,	doléte,	dôlga (dôglia),	dogliâte,
duôle,	dôlgono (dôgliono).	dôlga (dôglia),	dôlgano (dôgliano).

\* Also *dolyhiâmo*: a popular form.

16. Rimanére, *remain*, rimási, rimásto *or* rimáso; rimarrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Rimángo,	rimaniámo,*	Rimánga,	rimaniámo,*
rimáni,	rimanéte,	rimánga,	rimaniáte,
rimáne,	rimángono.	rimánga,	rimángano.

17. Tenére, *hold*, ténni, tenúto; terrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Têngo,	teniámo,*	Tênga,	teniámo,*
tiêni,	tenéte,	tênga,	teniáte,
tiêne,	têngono.	tênga,	têngano.

18. Valére, *be worth*, válsi, valúto *or* válso; varrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Válgo (váglio),	vagliámo,*	Válga (váglia),	vagliámo,*
váli,	valéte,	válga (váglia),	vagliáte,
vále,	válgono (vágliano).	válga (váglia),	válgano (vágliano).

19. Volére, *wish*, vòlli,† volúto; vorrò.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Vòglio,	vogliámo,	Vògli,	Vòglia,	vogliámo,
vuòli,†	voléte,	vogliámo,	vòglia,	vogliáte,
vuòle,	vògliono.	vogliáte.	vòglia,	vògliono.

20. Parére, *seem*, párvi, parúto *or* párso; parrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Páio,	paiámo <i>or</i> pariámo,	Páia,	paiámo <i>or</i> pariámo,
pári,	paréte,	páia,	paiáte,
páre,	páiono.	páia,	páiano.

21. Potére, *be able*, potéi, potúto; potrò. § *No imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Pôssso,	possiámo,	Pôssa,	possiámo,
puòli,	potéte,	pôssa,	possiáte,
può,	pôssono.	pôssa,	pôssano.

\* Also *rimanghiámo*; *tenghiámo*; *valghíámo*: popular forms.

† Also *vòlsi*.

† Also *vuògli* *or* *vuòli*.

§ In poetry we find a conditional *poria*. || Also *puòte*; *pônno*.

22. Persuadére, *persuade*, persuási, persuáso. *Pres.* persuádo, etc.  
 23. Calére, *matter*, cálse, calúto. *Impersonal.* No fut., cond., nor imperative. *Not modern.*

PRES. IND.

Cále.

PRES. SUBJ.

Cágliá.

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

*e.* All irregular verbs of the third conjugation are accented, in the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive, on the same syllable as in the infinitive.

*f.* Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert no *i* between the *c* or *g* and the *o* or *a* of the present indicative and subjunctive endings, except in the first person plural of both moods and the second person plural of the subjunctive. Cf. 60, last paragraph.

*g.* See chapter on Pronunciation, 4, 8, *d.*

## PRESENT REGULAR.

24. Accëndere, *light*, accési, accéso.  
 25. Affliggere, *afflict*, afflíssi, afflítto.  
 26. Álgere, *be cold*, álsi. *Defective. Rare.*  
 27. Allúdere, *allude*, allúsi (alludéi), allúso.  
 28. Árdere, *burn*, ársi, árso.  
 29. Arrôgere, *add*, arrôsi, arrôso or arrôto. *Defective. Rare.*  
 30. Assídere, *besiege*, assísi, assíso. *Rare.*  
 31. Assôlvère, *absolve*, assolvètti or assolvéi or assôlsi, assôlto or assóluto. *So* risôlvère (*determine*); *for* sôlvère, dissôlvère, and risôlvère (*dissolve*), see 107.  
 32. Assôrbere, *absorb*, assôrsi (*not in use*), assôrto. *Rare.*  
 33. Avèllere, *uproot*, avúlse, avúlso. *Defective. Rare.*  
 34. Chiúdere, *shut*, chiúsi, chiúso. *So all verbs in -chiúdere or -clúdere. See, however, 4, 8, d.*  
 35. Còlere, *revere*, còlto or cúlto. *Defective. Rare.*  
 36. Connèttere, *connect*, connéssi (connettéi), connèssô (connettúto). *Rare.*  
 37. Conóscere, *know*, conóbbi, conosciúto.  
 38. Conquídere, *conquer*, conquísi, conquíso. *Rare.*

39. Consumere, *consume*, consúnsi, consúnto. *Rare.* Presumere *has also* presuméi.
40. Contúndere, *bruise*, contúsi, contúso.
41. Córre, *run*, córsi, córso.
42. Créscere, *grow*, crébbi, cresciúto.
43. Cuócere, *cook*, cocéndo, còssi, còtto. *Pres.* cuócio *or* cuóco, *etc.\**
44. Decidere, *decide*, decisi, deciso.
45. Diféndere, *defend*, difési (difendéi), diféso.
46. Dirigere, *direct*, diréssi, dirétto.
47. Discútere, *discuss*, discússi (discutéi), discúso.
48. Distíngere, *distinguish*, distínsi, distínto.
49. Dividere, *divide*, divísi, divíso.
50. Elidere, *elide*, elísi (elidéi), elíso.
51. Elúdere, *elude*, elúsi (eludéi *or* eludétti), elúso.
52. Êrgere, *erect*, êrsi, êrto. *Rare.*
53. Esígere, *exact*, esigéi (esigétti), esátto.
54. Esístere, *exist*, esistéi (esistétti), esistíto.
55. Espéllere, *expel*, espúlsi, espúlso. *Rare.*
56. Esplódere, *explode*, esplósi, esplóso.
57. Esprímere, *express*, espréssi, espréso. *So all other verbs in*  
*-primere. Prémere and its compounds are regular.*
58. Féndere, *split*, fendéi (fendétti *or* fèssi), fendúto *or* fèso.
59. Fíggere (figere), *fix*, físsi, fítto.
60. Fíngere, *feign*, fínsi, fínto.
61. Fóndere, *melt*, fúsi (fondéi), fúso (fondúto).
62. Frángere, *break*, fránsi, fránto.
63. Fríggere, *fry*, fríssi, frítto.
64. Genufléttere, *kneel*, genufléssi, genufléso. *Rare.*
65. Intrídere, *dilute*, intrísi, intríso.
66. Intrúdere, *intrude*, intrúsi, intrúso.
67. Invádere, *invade*, invási, inváso.
68. Lédere, *offend*, lêsi (*not in use*), lêso. *Rare.*
69. Lêggere, *read*, lêssi, létto.
70. Lícere *or* lécere, *be lawful*, lécito *or* licito. *Impersonal. De*  
*fective. Poetical.*
71. Lúdere, *play*, lúsi, lúso. *Rare.*
72. Mèrgere, *plunge*, mèrsi, mèrso. *Rare.*
73. Mèttere, *put*, méssi *or* mísi, méso.

\* In the 1st and 2d persons plural of the pres. ind., subj., and impera-  
tive, *uo* is generally replaced by *o*: *cocidmo*, etc.

74. Mòlcere, *soothe*, mùlse. *Defective. Rare.*
75. Mòrdere, *bite*, mòrsi, mòrso.
76. Muòvere, *move*, movèndo, mòssi, mòsso.
77. Nàscere, *be born*, nàcqui, nàto.
78. Nascòndere, *hide*, nascòsi, nascòsto.
79. Neglìgere (*see* 5, 61), *neglect*, neglèssi, neglètto.
80. Offèndere, *offend*, offèsi, offèso.
81. Ostèndere, *show. Defective. Rare.*
82. Percípere, *perceive*, percètto. *Defective. Rare.*
83. Pérdere, *lose*, perdéi or perdètti or pèrsi, perdúto or pèrso.
84. Piòvere, *rain*, piòvve (piovè), piovúto. *Impersonal.*
85. Pòrgere, *present*, pòrsi, pòrto.
86. Predilìgere, *prefer*, predilèssi, predilètto.
87. Prèndere, *take*, prési, préso.
88. Protèggere, *protect*, protèssi, protètto.
89. Rádere, *shave*, rási (radéi), rásó.
90. Redímere, *redeem*, redènsi (rediméi), redénto.
91. Règgere, *support*, rèssi, rètto.
92. Rèndere, *render*, rési (rendéi or rendètti), réso (rendúto).
93. Rídere, *laugh*, risi, ríso.
94. Riflèttere, *reflect*, riflèttei or riflèssi, riflètúto or riflèssó. Riflèttere, "to reflect light," is generally irregular; riflèttere, "to meditate," is usually regular.
95. Rifùlgere, *shine*, rifùlsi. *Past part. lacking. Poetical.*
96. Rilúcere, *shine*, rilússi or rilucéi. *Past part. lacking.*
97. Rispòndere, *answer*, rispósi, rispósto.
98. Ródere, *gnaw*, rósi, róso.
99. Rómpere, *break*, rúppi, róttö.
100. Scèndere, *descend*, scési, scéso.
101. Scíndere, *sever*, scíndei or scíssi, scísso.
102. Sciòlvère, *breakfast*, sciòlsi or sciòlvètti, sciòlto. *Rare.*
103. Scòrgere, *perceive*, scòrsi, scòrto.
104. Scrívere, *write*, scríssi, scrítto.
105. Scuòtere, *shake*, scotèndo, scóssi, scóssó.\*
106. Soffólcere, *support*, soffólse, soffólto. *Defective. Rare.*
107. Sòlvère, *undo*, solvéi (solvètti), solúto. *Poetical. So dissòlvère; for assòlvère and risòlvère (determine), see 31.*
108. Sòrgere, *rise*, sòrsi, sòrto.

\* See page 94, footnote.

109. Sospèndere, *suspend*, sospési, sospéso. So appèndere, impèndere; pèndere *is reg.*, dipèndere *either reg. or irreg.*
110. Spàndere, *spill*, spandéi or spandètti, spànto.
111. Spàrgere, *scatter*, spàrsi, spàrso or spàrto.
112. Spèndere, *spend*, spési, spéso.
113. Spèrgere, *disperse*, spèrsi, spèrso. *Rare.*
114. Spòrgere, *project*, spòrsi, spòrto.
115. Stràggere, *melt*, strússi, strútto.
116. Succèdere, *happen*, succèssi or succedéi, succèssò or succedúto. So concèdere, *which has also concedètti*; cèdere *and its other compounds are generally regular.*
117. Sùggere, *suck*, suggéi or sússi. *Past part. lacking. Rare.*
118. Tèndere (*transitive*), *extend*, tési, téso. *The intrans. verb is reg., but has no past participle.*
119. Tèrgere, *wipe*, tèrsi or tergéi, tèrso. *Rare.*
120. Tòrcere, *twist*, tòrsi, tòrto.
121. Uccidere, *kill*, uccísi, uccíso.
122. Vín cere, *conquer*, vínsi, vínto.
123. Vív ere, *live*, víssi, vissúto or vivúto; viverò or vivrò.
124. Vòlgere, *turn*, vòlsi, vòlto.
125. Vòlv ere, *turn*, vòlsi, vòlto. *Rare. Devòlv ere has a past part. devolúto.*

## PRESENT IRREGULAR.

126. Êssere, *be*, fúì, státo; sarò. *See 53, a.\**
127. Bère or bévere, *drink*, bevèndo, bévvi (bevètti or bevéi), bevúto (beúto); berò or beverò.

## PRES. IND.

Bévo or béo, beviámo or beiámo,  
bévi or béi, bevéte or beéte,  
béve or bée, bévono or béono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Béva or béa, beviámo or beiámo,  
béva or béa, beviáte or beiáte,  
béva or béa, bévano or béano.

\* In the imperfect indicative *èramo* is often used for *eravámo*. We find in poetry: *sète* for *siète*; *énno* or *en* for *sóno* (third plur.); *síe* for *sia*; *erámo*, *eráte* for *eravámo*, *eraváte*; *u* for *o* in the preterite and imperfect subjunctive; *fóro* for *fúrono*; *fia*, *fiano* or *fieno*, for *sarà*, *saránno*; *fóra*, *fórano* for *sarà*, *sarèbbe*, *sarèbbero*; *sèndo* for *essèndo*; *súto*, *essúto*, or *issúto* for *státo*.

128. Chièdere, *ask*, chiési (chiési *or* chiedéi), chièsto.

## PRES. IND.

Chièdo (chièggo),\*  
 chièdi,  
 chiède,  
 chiediámo,  
 chiedéte,  
 chièdono (chièggono).\*

## PRES. SUBJ.

Chièda (chiègga),\*  
 chièda (chiègga),  
 chièda (chiègga),  
 chiediámo,  
 chiediate,  
 chièdano (chièggano).\*

129. Condúrre, *conduct*, conducêndo, condússi, condóttò ; *conduirò*.

## PRES. IND.

Condúco,    conduciámo,  
 condúci,    conducéte,  
 condúce,    condúcono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Condúca,    conduciámo,  
 condúca,    conduciáte,  
 condúca,    condúcano.

130. Nuòcere, *harm*, nocêndo, nòcqui, nociúto.

## PRES. IND.

Nuòco *or* nòccio, nociámo,  
 nuòci,    nocéte,  
 nuòce,    nuòcono *or* nòcciono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Nuòca *or* nòccia, nociámo,  
 nuòca *or* nòccia, nociáte,  
 nuòca *or* nòccia, nuòcano *or* nòcciano.

131. Pórre, *put*, ponêndo, pósi, pósto ; *porrò*.

## PRES. IND.

Póngo,    poniámo (ponghiámo),  
 póni,    ponéte,  
 póne,    póngono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Póngá,    poniámo (ponghiámo),  
 pónga,    poniáte,  
 pónga,    póngano.

132. Trárrre (tráere), *drag*, traêndo, trássi, tráttò ; *trarrò*.

## PRES. IND.

Trággo,    traiámo *or* traggiámo,†  
 trái (trággi),    traéte,  
 tráe (trágge),    trággono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Trágga,    traiámo *or* traggiámo,†  
 trágga,    traiáte,  
 trágga,    trággono.

133. Vèllere (vèrre), *tear up*, vèlsi, vèlto ; *vellerò* (*verrò or velgerò*).  
*Vèllere, which is rare, has not all the forms given here ; but its compound, svèllere, has them all.*\* Also *chièggio, chièggiono, chièggia, chièggiano*.† Also *tragghidmo*.

## PRES. IND.

Vèllo *or* vèlgo, velliámo (velgiámo),  
 vèlli (vèlgi), velléte,  
 vèlle (vèlge), vèllono *or* vèlgono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Vèlla *or* vèlga, velliámo (velgiámo),  
 vèlla *or* vèlga, velliáte (velgiáte),  
 vèlla *or* vèlga, vèllano *or* vèlgano.

134. Cògliere (còrre), *gather*, còlsi, còlto ; coglierò *or* corrò.

## PRES. IND.

Còlgo (cògljo), cogliámo (colghiámo),  
 cògli, cogliète,  
 còglie, còlgono (cògliono).

## PRES. SUBJ.

Còlga (còglia), cogliámo (colghiámo),  
 còlga (còglia), cogliáte,  
 còlga (còglia), còlgano (cògliano).

135. Scégliere (scérre), *choose: like* cògliere (134).

136. Sciògliere (sciòrre), *untie: like* cògliere (134).

137. Tògliere (tòrre), *take: like* cògliere (134).

138. Giúngere (giúgnere), *to arrive*, giúnsi, giúnto ; giungerò  
 (giugnerò).

## PRES. IND.

Giúngo (giúgno),  
 giúngi (giúgni),  
 giúnge (giúgne),  
 giungiámo (giugniámo),  
 giungéte (giugnéte),  
 giúngono (giúgnono).

## PRES. SUBJ.

Giúnga (giúgna),  
 giúnga (giúgna),  
 giúnga (giúgna),  
 giungiámo (giugniámo),  
 giungiáte (giugniáte),  
 giúngano (giúgnano).

139. Cíngere (cígnere), *gird: like* giúngere (138).

140. Múgnere (múngere), *milk: like* giúngere (138).

141. Piángere (piágnere), *weep: like* giúngere (138).

142. Píngere (pígnere), *paint: like* giúngere (138).

143. Púngere (púgnere), *prick: like* giúngere (138).

144. Spégnere (spéngere), *extinguish: like* giúngere (138), *except*  
*that the forms with gn are as common as those with ng.*

145. Spíngere (spígnere), *push: like* giúngere (138).

146. Stríngere (strígnere), *bind: like* giúngere (138), *except that the*  
*p.p. is strétto or strínto. Costríngere has only costrétto.*

147. Tíngere (tígnere), *dye: like* giúngere (138).

148. Úngere (úgnere), *anoint: like* giúngere (138).

## FOURTH CONJUGATION.

## PRESENT REGULAR.

149. Apríre, *open*, apríi or apêrsi, apêrto. *Pres.* ápro, *etc.*  
 150. Copríre (cuopríre), *cover*, copríi or copêrsi, copêrto. *Pres.* còpro (cuòpro), *etc.*  
 151. Offríre (offeríre), *offer*, offríi (offeríi) or offêrsi, offêrto. *Pres.* ôffro (offerísco), *etc.*  
 152. Soffríre, *suffer*: like offríre (151).  
 153. Convertíre, *convert*, convertíi or convêrsi, convertíto or convêrso. *Pres.* convêrto or convertísco, *etc.* *All other verbs in -vertíre are reg.*  
 154. Costruíre (construíre), *construct*, co(n)strússi or co(n)struíi, co(n)struíto or co(n)strútto. *Pres.* co(n)struísco, *etc.*  
 155. Digeríre, *digest*, digeríi, digeríto (digêsto). *Pres.* digerísco, *etc.*  
 156. Esauríre, *exhaust*, esauríi, esauríto or esáusto. *Pres.* esaurísco, *etc.*  
 157. Seppellíre or sepellíre, *bury*, sep(p)ellíi, seppellíto or sepólto. *Pres.* sep(p)ellísco, *etc.*

## PRESENT IRREGULAR.

158. Cucíre, *sew*, cucíi, cucíto. *Pres.* cúcio or cucísco. *This verb inserts i before o and a, but not before e and i.*  
 159. Sdrucíre or sdruscíre, *rip*: like cucíre (158).  
 160. Êmpíre or êmpiere, *fill*, empiêndo, empií, empiíto. *All but the present from the stem of êmpíre. So compíre or cómpiere, which has also a past part. compíuto.*

## PRES. IND.

Êmpio (empísco), empiámo,  
 êmpi (empísci), empié,  
 êmpie (empísce), êmpiono (empíscono).

## PRES. SUBJ.

Êmpia, empiámo,  
 êmpia, empiáte,  
 êmpia, êmpiano.

161. Moríre, *die*, moríi, môrto; morrò or morirò.

## PRES. IND.

Muðio (muðro), moriámo or muoiámo,  
 muðri or muði, morite,  
 muðre, muðiono (muðrono).

## PRES. SUBJ.

Muðia (muðra), moriámo or muoiámo,  
 muðia (muðra), muoiáte,  
 muðia (muðra), muðiano (muðrano).\*

\* In all forms where *uo* occurs, it may be replaced by *o*.

162. *Seguire, follow, seguli, seguito. Pres. séguo, etc. The verb is generally regular; but the é may be changed to iè in all forms where it is accented. Proseguire has -séguo or -seguisco.*
163. *Sparire, disappear, sparìi or spàrvi, sparìto. Pres. (regular) sparisco, etc. Apparire has appàrvi or -si or -li, apparito or appàrso; comparire has compàrvi or -si or -li, compàrso; otherwise they are like sparire, but they have in the present the additional forms: -pàio, -pàre, -pàiono; -pàia, -pàiano.*
164. *Dìre, say, dicendo, díssi, détto; dirò. Dìre (formerly dícere) belongs really to the third conjugation: dicésti, -éva, -éssi.*

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Díco,	diciámo,	Di',	Díca,	diciámo,
díci,	díte,	diciámo,	díca,	diciáte,
díce,	dícono.	díte.	díca,	dícano.

165. *Salire, ascend, salti or sàlsi, saltó.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Sálgo (salísco),	saliámo or sagliámo,*	Sálga (salísca),	saliámo or sagliámo,*
sáli (salís-ci),	salíte,	sálga (salísca),	sagliáte,
sále (salísce),	sálgono (salíscono).	sálga (salísca),	sálgano (salíscono).

166. *Venire, come, vénni, venúto; verrò.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Vêngo (vêgno),	veníámo,*	Vênga (vêgna),	veníámo,*
vièni,	veníte,	vênga (vêgna),	veniáte,
viène,	vêngono (vêgnono).	vênga (vêgna),	vêngano (vêgnano).

167. *Udire, hear, udli, udító; udirò (udirò).*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Ôdo,	udiámo,	Ôda,	udiámo,
ôdi,	udíte,	ôda,	udiáte,
ôde,	ôdono.	ôda,	ôdano.

168. *Uscire (escire), go out, uscli, uscító.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Êsco,	usciámo,	Êsca,	usciámo,
êsci,	uscíte,	êsca,	usciáte,
êsce,	êscono.	êsca,	êscano.

169. *Orìre, be born, òrto. Defective. Rare.*

---

\* Also *salghiámo; venghiámo* popular forms.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

**93.** Every irregular verb in this list is followed by a number referring to the table of Irregular Verbs arranged according to Conjugation. Obsolete defective verbs that present no irregularity have not been mentioned.

*a.* Compound verbs have, in general, been excluded from this list, unless they differ in conjugation from the simple verbs from which they come (see **67, a**). The commonest prefixes are: *a-* (corresponding in meaning to the preposition *a*); *as-* (= Latin *abs-*); *co-*, *com-*, *con-*, *cor-* (= prep. *con*); *contra-* (= prep. *contra*); *de-*, *di-* (= Lat. *de-*); *dis-* (= Lat. *dis-*); *e-*, *es-* (= Lat. *ex*); *i-*, *im-*, *in-*, *ir-* (= prep. *in*); *o-* (= Lat. *ob*); *per-* (= prep. *per*); *pre-* (= Lat. *prae-*); *pro-* (= Lat. *pro-*); *r-*, *re-*, *ri-* (= Lat. *re-*); *s-* (= Lat. *ex-* or *dis-*); *so-*, *sos-*, *su-* (= Lat. *sub*); *sopra-*, *sopr-*, *sor-* (= prep. *sopra*); *sott-*, *sotto-* (= prep. *sotto*); *stra-* (= Lat. *extra*); *tra-* (= prep. *tra*). After several of these prefixes the initial consonant of the simple verb is generally found doubled: *a* + *cadere* = *accadere*. *S-* is sometimes combined with *con-*, *r-* with *a-* or *in-*: *scoscendere*, *raccogliere*, *rincorrere*.

*Accadere*, see *cadere*, 7.  
*Accêndere*, 24.  
*Acclâdere*, see *chiâdere*, 34.  
*Accôrgere*, see *scôrgere*, 103.  
*Acquisire* has only *acquisito*.  
*Addârre*, see *condârre*, 129.  
*Affiggere*, 25.  
*Âlgere*, 26.  
*Allûdere*, 27.  
*Ancidere*, see *uccidere*, 121.

*Andâre*, 1.  
*Annêttete*, see *connêttete*, 36.  
*Antepôrre*, see *pôrre*, 131.  
*Antivedere*, *p.p.* only *antiveduto*,  
*otherwise like vedere*, 10.  
*Appârre*, see *sparre*, 163.  
*Appartenere*, see *tenere*, 17.  
*Appêndere*, see *sospêndere*, 109.  
*Aprîre*, 149.  
*Ârdere*, 28.

- Arrôgere, 29.  
 Ascêndere, *see* scêndere, 100.  
 Asciôlvere, *see* sciôlvere, 102.  
 Ascôndere, *see* nascôndere, 78.  
 Aspêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Assalîre, *see* salîre, 165.  
 Assidere, 30.  
 Assistere, *see* esistere, 54.  
 Assôlvere, 31.  
 Assôrbere, 32.  
 Assûmere, *see* consûmere, 39.  
 Avêllere, 33.  
 Avêre, 5.  
 Bére, 127.  
 Bévere, *see* bêre, 127.  
 Cadére, 7.  
 Calére, 23.  
 Cêdere, *generally reg., sometimes has*  
*pret. cêssi, p.p. cêssô.*  
 Chiêdere, 128.  
 Chiûdere, 34.  
 Cîgnere, *see* cîngere, 139.  
 Cîngere, 139.  
 Circoncîdere, *see* decîdere, 44.  
 Cògliere, 134.  
 Coincîdere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Còlere, 35.  
 Collûdere, *see* lûdere, 71.  
 Comparîre, *see* sparîre, 163.  
 Compêtere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Còmpiere, *see* empîre, 160.  
 Compîre, *see* empîre, 160.  
 Comprîmere, *see* esprîmere, 57.  
 Concêdere, *see* succêdere, 116.  
 Conclûdere, *see* chiûdere, 34.  
 Concûtere, *see* discûtere, 47.  
 Condûrre, 129.  
 Connêtttere, 36.  
 Conôscere, 37.  
 Conquîdere, 38.  
 Consîstere, *see* esistere, 54.  
 Constâre *is reg.*  
 Constrûire, *see* costruîre, 154.  
 Consûmere, 39.  
 Contêndere, *see* têndere, 118.  
 Contrastâre *is reg.*  
 Controvêrttere, *see* Vêrttere.  
 Contûndere, 40.  
 Convêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Convertîre, 153.  
 Coprîre, 150.  
 Còrre, *see* cògliere, 134.  
 Còrrere, 41.  
 Corrispôndere, *see* rispôndere, 97  
 Cospârgere, *see* spârgere, 111.  
 Cospêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Costrûire, 154.  
 Crêscere, 42.  
 Cucîre, 158.  
 Cuôcere, 43.  
 Cuoprîre, *see* coprîre, 150.  
 Dâre, 3.  
 Decîdere, 44.  
 Dedûrre, *see* condûrre, 129.  
 Delinquere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and*  
*its pret., delinquêtti, is rare.*  
 Deprimere, *see* esprîmere, 57.  
 Desistere, *see* esistere, 54.  
 Devôlvere, *see* vôlvere, 125.  
 Difêndere, 45.  
 Digerîre, 155.  
 Dipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.  
 Dîre, 164.  
 Dirîgere, 46.  
 Dirîmere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Discêndere, *see* scêndere, 100.  
 Discûtere, 47.  
 Dispêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Dissôlvere, *see* sôlvere, 107.  
 Dissuadêre, *see* persuadêre, 22.

- Distâre, *reg. in pres. of all moods, no pres. p., otherwise like stâre*, 4.  
 Distinguerre, 48.  
 Distruggere, *see struggere*, 115.  
 Divedere, *has nothing but infin.*  
 Divêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Dividere, 49.  
 Dolere, 15.  
 Dovere, 8.  
 Elèggere, *see lèggere*, 69.  
 Eldere, 50.  
 Elâdere, 51.  
 Êmpiere, *see emprire*, 160.  
 Empire, 160.  
 Êrgere, 52.  
 Ergere, *see dirigere*, 46.  
 Esaurire, 156.  
 Escire, *see uscire*, 168.  
 Esclûdere, *see chiûdere*, 34.  
 Esigere, 53.  
 Esimere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Esistere, 54.  
 Espèllere, 55.  
 Esplôdere, 56.  
 Esprimere, 57.  
 Êssere, 126.  
 Estînguerre, *see distinguerre*, 48.  
 Evâdere, *see invâdere*, 67.  
 Fâre, 2.  
 Fêndere, 58.  
 Fêrvere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and is rare except in the third pers. of the pres. and imp. ind.*  
 Fîgere, *see figgere*, 59.  
 Figgere, 59.  
 Fîngere, 60.  
 Fôndere, 61.  
 Frângere, 62.  
 Friggere, 63.  
 Genuflêtterre, 64.  
 Giacere, 11.  
 Gîre, *defect. : pres. giâmo, gîte; imp. gîva or giâ, etc.; imper. giâmo, gîte; pres. subj. giâmo, giâte; no pres. p.; rest reg.*  
 Giûgnere, *see giângere*, 138.  
 Giângere, 138.  
 Illûdere, *see lûdere*, 71.  
 Impèllere, *see espèllere*, 55.  
 Impêndere, *see sospêndere*, 109.  
 Imprimere, *see esprimere*, 57.  
 Incidere, *see decidere*, 44.  
 Inclûdere, *see chiûdere*, 34.  
 Incûtere, *see discûtere*, 47.  
 Indârre, *see condârre*, 129.  
 Insistere, *see esistere*, 54.  
 Instâre *is reg.*  
 Instruire, *see construire*, 154.  
 Intêndere, *see têndere*, 118.  
 Intercêdere, *see succêdere*, 116.  
 Intridere, 65.  
 Introdârre, *see condârre*, 129.  
 Intrûdere, 66.  
 Invâdere, 67.  
 Invalere, *p.p. only invâlso, otherwise like valere*, 18.  
 Îre, *defect. : pres. îte; imp. îva, etc.; pret. îsti, îste, îro; fut. îrêmo, îrête, îrânno; imper. îte; imp. subj. îsse, îste, îssero; p.p. îto.*  
 Istruire, *see costruire*, 154.  
 Lêcere, *see licere*, 70.  
 Lêdere, 68.  
 Lèggere, 69.  
 Licere, 70.  
 Lûcere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Lûdere, 71.  
 Mantenere, *see tenere*, 17.  
 Mêrgere, 72.  
 Mêtterre, 73.

- Mòlcere, 74.  
 Mòrdere, 75.  
 Moríre, 161.  
 Múgnere, 140.  
 Múngere, *see* múgnere, 140.  
 Muðvere, 76.  
 Náscere, 77.  
 Nascóndere, 78.  
 Neglígere, 79.  
 Nuðcere, 130.  
 Ofñendere, 80.  
 Offeríre, *see* offíre, 151.  
 Ofíre, 151.  
 Opprimere, *see* esprímere, 57.  
 Oríre, 169.  
 Ostáre *is reg.*  
 Ostèndere, 81.  
 Parére, 20.  
 Percípere, 82.  
 Percuðtere, *see* scuðtere, 105.  
 Pèrdere, 83.  
 Permanére, *see* rimanére, 16.  
 Persístere, *see* esístere, 54.  
 Persuadére, 22.  
 Piacére, 12.  
 Piágnere, *see* piángere, 141.  
 Piángere, 141.  
 Pígnere, *see* píngere, 142.  
 Píngere, 142.  
 Piðvere, 84.  
 Pørgere, 85.  
 Pórrer, 131.  
 Pospórrer, *see* pórrer, 131.  
 Possedére, *see* sedére, 9.  
 Potére, 21.  
 Precídere, *see* decídere, 44.  
 Preclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.  
 Predilígere, 86.  
 Prêmere *is reg.*  
 Prêndere, 87.  
 Prestáre *is reg.*  
 Presúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.  
 Prevedére, *see* vedére, 10.  
 Prodúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.  
 Protèggere, 88.  
 Provvedére, *fut. ana cond. uncontracted, otherwise like vedére, 10.*  
 Prúdere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and is used only in the third pers.*  
 Púgnere, *see* púngere, 143.  
 Púngere, 143.  
 Raccògliere, *see* cògliere, 134.  
 Rádere, 89.  
 Raggiúngere, *see* giúngere, 138.  
 Recídere, *see* decídere, 44.  
 Redímere, 90.  
 Règgere, 91.  
 Rèndere, 92.  
 Repèllere, *see* espèllere, 55.  
 Reprimere, *see* esprímere, 57.  
 Resistere, *see* esístere, 54.  
 Restáre *is reg.*  
 Rídere, 93.  
 Ridúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.  
 Riflèttere, 94.  
 Rifúlgere, 95.  
 Rilúcere, 96.  
 Rimanére, 16.  
 Risòlvere (*dissolve*), *see* sòlvere, 107.  
 Risòlvere (*determine*), *see* assòlvere, 31.  
 Rispóndere, 97.  
 Ristáre, *see* stáre, 4.  
 Risúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.  
 Ródere, 98.  
 Rómpere, 99.  
 Salíre, 165.  
 Sapére, 6.  
 Scégliere, 135.  
 Scéndere, 100.  
 Scérre, *see* scégliere, 135.

Scindere, 101.  
 Sciògliere, 136.  
 Sciòlvere, 102.  
 Sciòrre, *see* sciògliere, 136.  
 Scommettere, *see* mèttere, 73.  
 Scoprire, *see* coprire, 150.  
 Scòrgere, 103.  
 Scrivere, 104.  
 Scudtere, 105.  
 Sdrucire, 159.  
 Sdruscire, *see* sdrucire, 159.  
 Sedere, 9.  
 Sedurre, *see* condurre, 129.  
 Seguire, 162.  
 Sepellire, *see* seppellire, 157.  
 Seppellire, 157.  
 Soffrire, *see* soffrire, 152.  
 Sofficere, 106.  
 Soffrire, 152.  
 Solere, 14.  
 Sòlvere, 107.  
 Sopprimere, *see* esprimere, 57.  
 Soprastare, *see* stare, 4.  
 Sòrgere, 108.  
 Sospendere, 109.  
 Sostare *is reg.*  
 Sottostare, *see* stare, 4.  
 Sovrastare, *see* stare, 4.  
 Spandere, 110.  
 Spargere, 111.  
 Sparire, 163.  
 Spègnere, 144.  
 Spèndere, 112.  
 Spèngere, *see* spègnere, 144.  
 Spèrgere, 113.  
 Spìgnere, *see* spìngere, 145.  
 Spìngere, 145.  
 Spòrgere, 114.  
 Stare, 4.  
 Stridere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*

Strignere, *see* stringere, 146.  
 Stringere, 146.  
 Stréggere, 115.  
 Subire *is reg.: pres. subisco.*  
 Succedere, 116.  
 Sùggere, 117.  
 Sussistere, *see* esistere, 54.  
 Svèllere, *see* vèllere, 133.  
 Tacere, 13.  
 Tèndere (*trans.*), 118. [*p.p.*  
 Tèndere (*intrans.*), *reg. verb, has no*  
 Tenere, 17.  
 Tèrgere, 119.  
 Tìgnere, *see* tingere, 147.  
 Tìngere, 147.  
 Tògliere, 137.  
 Tòrcere, 120.  
 Tòrre, *see* tògliere, 137.  
 Tradurre, *see* condurre, 129.  
 Tràcere, *see* trarre, 132.  
 Transìgere, *see* esìgere, 53.  
 Trarre, 132.  
 Uccidere, 121.  
 Udire, 167.  
 Úgnere, *see* úngere, 148.  
 Úngere, 148.  
 Uscire, 168.  
 Valere, 18.  
 Vedere, 10.  
 Vèllere, 133.  
 Venire, 166.  
 Vèrre, *see* vèllere, 133.  
 Vèrtere, *reg. verb, is used only in the*  
*pres. and imp.*  
 Vilipèndere, *see* sospèndere, 109.  
 Vincere, 122.  
 Vivere, 123.  
 Volere, 19.  
 Vòlgere, 124.  
 Vòlvere, 125.



## ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

- A**, to, at, in.  
**A'**, **ái**, **al**, *etc.* = **a** + *art.*  
**Abbellíto**, beautified.  
**Accompagnáre**, accompany.  
**Accórgersi**, perceive.  
**Ácqua**, water.  
**Ad**, *see A.*  
**Affacciársi**, place one's self (*at a window*).  
**Affrettáre**, hasten.  
**Agguantáre**, seize.  
**Agostíno**, Gus.  
**Álbero**, tree.  
**Ále**, wing.  
**Alétta**, little wing.  
**Alettína**, little wing.  
**Alfrédo**, Alfred.  
**Allontanáre**, send off.  
**Allóra**, then.  
**Áltro**, other.  
**Amáro**, bitter.  
**Ánche**, also, even.  
**Andár**, *see Andáre*.  
**Andáre**, go, to go, going.  
**Andársene**, go away.  
**Andáto**, gone.  
**Anéllo**, ring.  
**Animále**, animal.  
**Animalíno**, little creature.  
**Antíco**, old.  
**Ápe**, bee.  
**Appéna**, hardly.
- Appôsta**, on purpose.  
**Ária**, air.  
**Arricchíto**, enriched.  
**Arriváre**, arrive.  
**Arriváto**, having arrived.  
**Ásino**, ass.  
**Assalíre**, attack.  
**Assênzio**, wormwood.  
**Assolúto**, absolute.  
**Áttimo**, flash.  
**Avánti a**, in front of.  
**Avére**, have.  
**Avvedérsi di**, perceive.  
**Azionáccia**, *from Azíone*.  
**Azíone**, action.  
**Bábbo**, father, papa.  
**Badáre**, keep.  
**Bagnáre**, bathe.  
**Bambíno**, child.  
**Bárbaro**, barbarian.  
**Barbóne**, water-spaniel.  
**Baróne**, baron.  
**Bastóne**, stick.  
**Bel**, *see Bello*.  
**Bellíssimo**, very beautiful.  
**Bello**, beautiful, fine, kind.  
**Ben**, *see Bène*.  
**Bène**, well, nicely, much.  
**Bène**, good (*noun*).  
**Bócca**, mouth.  
**Bôve**, ox.  
**Brávo**, worthy.

<b>Brilláre</b> , shine.	<b>Città</b> , city.
<b>Brútto</b> , ugly.	<b>Cittadíno</b> , citizen.
<b>Bucáto</b> , pricked.	<b>Códa</b> , tail.
<b>Bugía</b> , lie.	<b>Cógli</b> , col, <i>etc.</i> = <i>con</i> + <i>art.</i>
<b>Búio</b> , dark.	<b>Cógliere</b> , catch, pick.
<b>Buòno</b> , good.	<b>Cóllo</b> , neck.
<b>Buttáre</b> , throw. <i>Buttar giù</i> =	<b>Cóme</b> , as, like, how, when.
swallow.	<b>Cominciáre</b> , begin.
<b>Cadére</b> , fall.	<b>Comméttere</b> , commit.
<b>Calzóni</b> , trousers.	<b>Compáño</b> , companion.
<b>Can</b> , <i>see</i> <b>Cáne</b> .	<b>Comúne</b> , town. <i>Comúni</i> = com-
<b>Cáne</b> , dog,	mons.
<b>Capáce</b> , capable.	<b>Con</b> , with.
<b>Cápo</b> , head. <i>Da cápo, daccápo</i> =	<b>Confètti</b> , candy.
once more.	<b>Conóscere</b> , know, find out.
<b>Cappèllo</b> , hat.	<b>Cónte</b> , count.
<b>Carlomagno</b> , Charlemagne.	<b>Continovaménte</b> , continually.
<b>Cárne</b> , flesh.	<b>Contínuo</b> , continual.
<b>Cása</b> , house, home.	<b>Cónto</b> , count.
<b>Cascáre</b> , fall.	<b>Córpo</b> , body.
<b>Cassétta</b> , drawer.	<b>Corrèggerai</b> , reform.
<b>Cassettóne</b> , bureau.	<b>Cósa</b> , thing. <i>Cósa pública</i> = gov-
<b>Castèllo</b> , castle.	ernment.
<b>Cattívo</b> , bad, naughty.	<b>Così</b> , so, thus.
<b>Cèlia</b> , trick.	<b>Creatúra</b> , creature.
<b>Cènto</b> , a hundred.	<b>Crédere</b> , believe.
<b>Cercáre</b> , search.	<b>Cúí</b> , whom, whose.
<b>Cèrto</b> , certain, some.	<b>Curiosità</b> , curiosity.
<b>Cespúglio</b> , bush.	<b>Curíoso</b> , curious, funny.
<b>Che</b> , who, which, that.	<b>Da</b> , by, from, as to. <i>Dalle parti</i>
<b>Che</b> , what. <i>Che còsa</i> = what.	= at the sides.
<b>Che</b> , that.	<b>Daccápo</b> , <i>see</i> <b>Cápo</b> .
<b>Che</b> , than.	<b>Dái</b> , dal, <i>etc.</i> = <i>da</i> + <i>art.</i>
<b>Chi</b> . . . <b>chi</b> , one . . . another.	<b>Dáre</b> , give, look.
<b>Chiamáre</b> , call.	<b>De'</b> , <i>dégli, déi, del, etc.</i> = <i>di</i> + <i>art</i>
<b>Chíoca</b> , sweetmeat.	<b>Desidèrio</b> , desire.
<b>Ci</b> , there.	<b>Détto</b> , said, told.
<b>Cinque</b> , five.	<b>Di</b> , of, than, to, with.

<b>Dicêrto</b> , surely.	<b>Fâre</b> , make, let.
<b>Di diêtro</b> , from behind.	<b>Farfâlla</b> , butterfly.
<b>Diêci</b> , ten.	<b>Fasciâre</b> , bandage.
<b>Diêtro</b> , behind, after. <i>Di diêtro</i> = from behind. <i>Diêtro a</i> = after.	<b>Fêrro</b> , iron.
<b>Dintôrni</b> , neighborhood.	<b>Figliuôlo</b> , child, son.
<b>Dîo</b> , God.	<b>Figurârsi</b> , imagine.
<b>Dîre</b> , say, speak.	<b>Finchê non</b> , until.
<b>Dirîtto</b> , right.	<b>Finêstra</b> , window.
<b>Discôrso</b> , talk.	<b>Finîre</b> , finish.
<b>Disobbediênte</b> , disobedient.	<b>Fino a</b> , up to.
<b>Disperâto</b> , desperate.	<b>Fîore</b> , flower.
<b>Distânza</b> , distance.	<b>Fiorito</b> , flowery.
<b>Distrûggere</b> , destroy.	<b>Firênze</b> , Florence.
<b>Disubbidîente</b> , disobedient.	<b>Firmamênto</b> , firmament.
<b>Ditîno</b> , from Dîto.	<b>Fôglia</b> , leaf.
<b>Dîto</b> , finger. <i>Dîto grôssso</i> = thumb.	<b>Fônte</b> , fountain.
<b>Diventâre</b> , become.	<b>Forestiêro</b> , foreign.
<b>Dôdici</b> , twelve.	<b>Fra</b> , between, in, to.
<b>Dolôre</b> , pain.	<b>Frêddo</b> , cold.
<b>Dôpo</b> , after.	<b>Frôn-te</b> , forehead.
<b>Dôve</b> , where.	<b>Frûtto</b> , fruit.
<b>Dovêre</b> , ought, must.	<b>Fuggîre</b> , flee.
<b>Dûe</b> , two.	<b>Fuôri</b> , out.
<b>Dûnque</b> , therefore.	<b>Fûria</b> , haste.
<b>Durânte</b> , during.	<b>Gâmba</b> , leg.
<b>E</b> , and.	<b>Gâmbo</b> , stem.
<b>Êcco</b> , this is.	<b>Gâtto</b> , cat.
<b>Ed</b> , and.	<b>Genitôri</b> , parents.
<b>Enríco</b> , Henry.	<b>Già</b> , already.
<b>Êssa</b> , it.	<b>Giardîno</b> , garden.
<b>Êsse</b> , them.	<b>Gîglio</b> , lily.
<b>Êssere</b> , be. <i>Êssere per</i> = be about to.	<b>Giorgêtto</b> , Georgie.
<b>Êssi</b> , them.	<b>Giôrno</b> , day.
<b>Êsso</b> , it.	<b>Girâr</b> , see <b>Girâre</b> .
<b>Fâllo</b> , fault.	<b>Girâre</b> , go around.
<b>Fanciûllo</b> , child.	<b>Girâto</b> , gone around.
	<b>Gîro</b> , turn, circuit.
	<b>Gîro gîro a</b> , round and round.

**Giù**, down.  
**Giudizio**, judgment, idea.  
**Gli**, the.  
**Gli**, it.  
**Gli**, to him.  
**Glie**, *see* **Gli**, **Le**.  
**Globo**, globe.  
**Goloso**, glutton, greedy.  
**Governato**, governed.  
**Grande**, big.  
**Grandissimo**, very big.  
**Grido**, shout.  
**Grasso**, big.  
**Guardarsi**, refrain.  
**I**, the.  
**Il**, the.  
**Illuminato**, illumined.  
**Il quäle**, who.  
**Imperatore**, emperor.  
**Impèro**, empire.  
**In**, in.  
**Infatti**, in fact.  
**Infinitamente**, infinitely.  
**Infino**, even.  
**Infocato**, blazing.  
**Ingordigia**, gluttony.  
**Insegnare**, teach.  
**Insetto**, insect.  
**Insieme**, together.  
**Insomma**, in short.  
**Intendimento**, intelligence.  
**Intorno**, around (*adv.*).  
**Intorno a**, around (*prep.*).  
**Invasione**, invasion.  
**Inspirare**, inspire.  
**L'**, *see* **La**, **Le**, **Lo**.  
**La**, the.  
**La**, it, her.

**Là**, there. *Di là* = there.  
**Lacerare**, tear.  
**Ladro**, thief.  
**Ladro**, robber.  
**Lampo**, flash.  
**Lancetta**, hand.  
**Lasciare**, leave, let, let go.  
**Lasciato**, let.  
**Lavorare**, work.  
**Le**, the.  
**Le**, to her, to it.  
**Le**, them.  
**Leone**, lion.  
**Lesto**, quick.  
**Levare**, take away. *Levarest (with direct object)* = get rid of.  
**Levato**, up.  
**Li**, them.  
**Li**, there.  
**Liberò**, free.  
**Lo**, the.  
**Lo**, him, it.  
**Longobardo**, Longobard.  
**Lontano**, distant.  
**Loro**, them, their.  
**Luce**, light.  
**Lucertola**, lizard.  
**Lui**, him, he.  
**Lume**, light.  
**Luminoso**, luminous.  
**Luna**, moon.  
**Ma**, but.  
**Madre**, mother.  
**Maestoso**, majestic.  
**Maestra**, school-mistress.  
**Maestro**, school-master.  
**Maggio**, May.  
**Maggiore**, larger.

<b>Mái</b> , ever. <i>Non mái</i> = never.	<b>Nascósto</b> , hidden.
<b>Malánno</b> , harm. <i>Far malánni</i> = mischief-making.	<b>Náso</b> , nose.
<b>Maláta</b> , ill.	<b>Náto</b> , born.
<b>Maldicónte</b> , gossip.	<b>Ne</b> , of it, for it.
<b>Mále</b> , badly, ill.	<b>Nè</b> , nor.
<b>Mále</b> , wicked.	<b>Néi</b> , nel, <i>etc.</i> = in + <i>art.</i>
<b>Mámma</b> , mother, mamma.	<b>Nemméno</b> , even.
<b>Mandáre</b> , send.	<b>Nessúno</b> , nobody.
<b>Mangiáre</b> , eat.	<b>Niccolíno</b> , Nicholas, Nick.
<b>Maniéra</b> , manner.	<b>Nído</b> , nest.
<b>Máno</b> , hand.	<b>No</b> , no. <i>Di no</i> = no.
<b>Mattína</b> , morning.	<b>Nóbile</b> , noble.
<b>Méno</b> , less.	<b>Nobiltà</b> , nobility.
<b>Ménto</b> , chin.	<b>Nói</b> , we, us.
<b>Ménte</b> , while.	<b>Nóia</b> , trouble.
<b>Meraviglióso</b> , wonderful.	<b>Non</b> , not. <i>Non . . . che</i> = only.
<b>Metà</b> , half.	<b>Nóstro</b> , our.
<b>Méttere</b> , put. <i>Míttersi</i> = begin, put on.	<b>Nótte</b> , night.
<b>Mèzzo</b> , half.	<b>Nòve</b> , nine.
<b>Mèzzo</b> , middle. <i>In mézzo a</i> = in the middle of.	<b>Núlla</b> , nothing.
<b>Mício</b> , puss, cat.	<b>Número</b> , number.
<b>Millióne</b> , million.	<b>O</b> , or.
<b>Minacciáre</b> , threaten.	<b>O</b> , oh.
<b>Minóre</b> , smaller.	<b>Òcchio</b> , eye.
<b>Minúto</b> , minute.	<b>Occhióne</b> , from <b>Òcchio</b> .
<b>Mío</b> , my.	<b>Odóre</b> , odor.
<b>Mòdo</b> , way.	<b>Ógni</b> , every.
<b>Molestáre</b> , annoy.	<b>Ognúno</b> , everybody.
<b>Mólti</b> , many.	<b>Óltre</b> , beyond, over.
<b>Mólto</b> , much.	<b>Óra</b> , now.
<b>Mórdere</b> , bite.	<b>Óra</b> , hour.
<b>Mósca</b> , fly.	<b>Oramái</b> , at last.
<b>Móstra</b> , face.	<b>Origíne</b> , origin.
<b>Múro</b> , wall.	<b>Òro</b> , gold.
<b>Mutáre</b> , change.	<b>Orológio</b> , watch.
	<b>Ótto</b> , eight.
	<b>Padroncínó</b> , little master.
	<b>Palázso</b> , palace.

<b>Panière</b> , basket.	<b>Préso</b> , near.
<b>Panierino</b> , <i>from Panière</i> .	<b>Prêto</b> , early.
<b>Pànni</b> , clothes.	<b>Pretèndere</b> , expect.
<b>Parécohio</b> , some.	<b>Prevalére</b> , prevail.
<b>Parére</b> , seem.	<b>Prìmo</b> , first.
<b>Pàrte</b> , part, side. <i>Dalle parti</i> = at the sides. <i>A quèsta parte</i> = to this time.	<b>Prònto</b> , quick.
<b>Participàre</b> , participate.	<b>Público</b> , public.
<b>Pàsso</b> , step.	<b>Punire</b> , punish.
<b>Pàtto</b> , condition. <i>A pàtto che</i> = on condition that.	<b>Púnto</b> , point.
<b>Pel</b> = per il.	<b>Quadrúpede</b> , quadruped.
<b>Pensàre</b> , think.	<b>Qualche</b> , some.
<b>Per</b> , for, in order to, on account of, through, by.	<b>Qualchedúno</b> , somebody.
<b>Perchè</b> , why, because.	<b>Qualcosa</b> , anything.
<b>Pèrdere</b> , lose.	<b>Qualcúno</b> , somebody.
<b>Perdonàre</b> , pardon.	<b>Quále</b> , <i>see Il quale</i> .
<b>Permesso</b> , permission.	<b>Quándo</b> , when.
<b>Però</b> , therefore, however.	<b>Quánto</b> , as much.
<b>Pésce</b> , fish.	<b>Quattórdici</b> , fourteen.
<b>Pétto</b> , chest.	<b>Quáttro</b> , four.
<b>Piánta</b> , plant.	<b>Que'</b> , <i>quéi</i> , <i>pl. of Quéllo</i> .
<b>Piochiàre</b> , strike.	<b>Quégli</b> , <i>pl. of Quéllo</i> .
<b>Piccíno</b> , tiny, small.	<b>Quel</b> , <i>see Quéllo</i> .
<b>Piccolo</b> , little, small.	<b>Quéllo</b> , that, that one.
<b>Piède</b> , foot.	<b>Quésto</b> , this, this one.
<b>Pièno</b> , full.	<b>Qui</b> , here. <i>Di qui</i> = here.
<b>Pigliàre</b> , take.	<b>Quíndi</b> , therefore.
<b>Pínnà</b> , fin.	<b>Raccontàre</b> , relate.
<b>Più</b> , more, most.	<b>Raggiúngere</b> , overtake.
<b>Po'</b> , little.	<b>Ragióne</b> , reason.
<b>Pói</b> , then, too.	<b>Rasènte</b> , close.
<b>Portàre</b> , take, bring.	<b>Refezióne</b> , lunch.
<b>Potére</b> , can, be able.	<b>Règgere</b> , stand, endure.
<b>Pôvero</b> , poor.	<b>Respiràre</b> , breathe.
<b>Prèndere</b> , take.	<b>Rèttilè</b> , reptile.
	<b>Riccardo</b> , Richard.
	<b>Ricominciàre</b> , begin again.
	<b>Ricordàrsi</b> , remember.
	<b>Ricreazióne</b> , recess.

- Rídere**, laugh.  
**Ríga**, line. *Di prima ríga* = first-class.  
**Righettína**, little mark.  
**Rimandáre**, send back.  
**Rimanére**, remain.  
**Rimediáre a**, atone for.  
**Rimproveráre**, reprove.  
**Ripêtere**, repeat.  
**Ripóso**, rest.  
**Rispóndere**, reply.  
**Risputáre**, spit again.  
**Rómpere**, break.  
**Rósa**, rose.  
**Rotóndo**, round.  
**Rubáre**, steal.  
**Sanguínoso**, bloody.  
**Sapére**, know, hear.  
**Saporaccio**, *from Sapóre*.  
**Sapóre**, taste.  
**Sásso**, stone.  
**Scappáre**, run away.  
**Scéna**, scene.  
**Scéndere**, *see Scéndere*.  
**Scéndere**, descend.  
**Scuóla**, school.  
**Se**, if, whether.  
**Se**, *see Si*.  
**Sè**, itself, himself, herself.  
**Secóndo che**, according as.  
**Segnáto**, marked.  
**Seguíre**, turn out.  
**Sèi**, six.  
**Sèmpre**, always.  
**Senése**, Sienese.  
**Sentíre**, taste, hear.  
**Sénza**, without.  
**Sérpe**, snake.
- Servitóre**, servant.  
**Sessánta**, sixty.  
**Sètte**, seven.  
**Sfacciatággine**, impudence.  
**Si**, himself, herself, itself.  
**Si**, yes, so.  
**Signóra**, lady.  
**Signóre**, gentleman.  
**Signoría**, rule.  
**Símile**, like.  
**Smisuráto**, boundless.  
**Soáve**, sweet.  
**Solaménte**, only.  
**Sóle**, sun.  
**Sollécito**, early, brisk.  
**Sólo**, alone.  
**Sommáto**, added.  
**Sóptra**, on, above. *Di sópra* = up, above.  
**Sorèlla**, sister.  
**Sorellína**, *from Sorèlla*.  
**Sórte**, lucky..  
**Sospettáre**, suspect.  
**Sospétto**, suspicion.  
**Sostégno**, support.  
**Sótto**, under. *Di sótto* = down, underneath.  
**Sparíre**, disappear.  
**Spícchio**, slice.  
**Spína**, thorn.  
**Sputáre**, spit.  
**Stánza**, room.  
**Stáre**, stay, stand.  
**Stélla**, star.  
**Stéssso**, himself.  
**Stéssso**, same.  
**Stéssso**, even.  
**Stracciáre**, tear.

<b>Strétto</b> , close, tight.	<b>Úna</b> , a, one.
<b>Strilláre</b> , scream.	<b>Úndici</b> , eleven.
<b>Su</b> , on, up.	<b>Úno</b> , a, one.
<b>Su'</b> , <i>sul</i> , <i>etc.</i> = <i>su</i> + <i>art.</i>	<b>Uôvo</b> , egg.
<b>Súbito</b> , at once.	<b>Urláre</b> , yell.
<b>Súo</b> , its, his, her.	<b>Úscio</b> , door.
<b>Tánte</b> , so much, so, much.	<b>Vassoíno</b> , tray.
<b>Tánte . . . quánte</b> , both . . . and.	<b>Vedére</b> , see.
<b>Te</b> , thee, you.	<b>Ventiquáttro</b> , twenty-four.
<b>Têmpo</b> , time.	<b>Verità</b> , truth.
<b>Tenúto</b> , held.	<b>Véro</b> , true.
<b>Têrra</b> , earth, ground, land.	<b>Vescovo</b> , bishop.
<b>Território</b> , territory.	<b>Vêspa</b> , wasp.
<b>Ti</b> , thee, you.	<b>Vestíre</b> , dress.
<b>Tíráre</b> , throw, draw. <i>Tírdar fudri</i> , take out.	<b>Vía</b> , off, away, so forth. <i>Some-</i> <i>times used instead of a verb of</i> <i>motion.</i>
<b>Tócco</b> , one o'clock.	<b>Viággio</b> , way, journey.
<b>Tornáre</b> , return, returning.	<b>Vicino</b> , near.
<b>Tórno tórno a</b> , round and round.	<b>Viôla</b> , violet.
<b>Toscáno</b> , Tuscan.	<b>Viôttola</b> , path.
<b>Tra</b> , among, to.	<b>Víso</b> , face.
<b>Tranquillaménte</b> , tranquilly.	<b>Vísapo</b> , lively.
<b>Trátto</b> : <i>a un trátto</i> = all at once.	<b>Viziácio</b> , <i>from Vizio</i> .
<b>Traversáre</b> , cross.	<b>Vizio</b> , vice.
<b>Tre</b> , three.	<b>Vóce</b> , voice.
<b>Trédici</b> , thirteen.	<b>Vôglia</b> , desire.
<b>Trónco</b> , trunk.	<b>Volére</b> , wish.
<b>Trováre</b> , find.	<b>Volontariaménte</b> , voluntarily.
<b>Tu</b> , thou, you.	<b>Vôlta</b> , time.
<b>Túo</b> , thy, your.	<b>Voltár</b> , <i>see Voltáre</i> .
<b>Túto</b> , all. <i>Per túto</i> = every- where. <i>Tútti e dúe</i> = both; <i>tútti</i> <i>e tre</i> = all three; <i>etc.</i>	<b>Voltáre</b> , turn.
<b>Uocellíno</b> , <i>from Uocêllo</i> .	<b>Zámpa</b> , paw, foot.
<b>Uocêllo</b> , bird.	<b>Zampína</b> , little paw.
<b>Un</b> , a, one.	<b>Zanzára</b> , mosquito.
	<b>Zimbêllo</b> , laughing-stock.

## ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY.

---

<b>A</b> , un, úno, úna.	<b>Bird</b> , uccéllo.
<b>Africa</b> , Áffrica.	<b>Black</b> , néro.
<b>After</b> , dópo.	<b>Blood</b> , sángue, <i>m.</i>
<b>Ago</b> , fa.	<b>Boil</b> , bollíre.
<b>Aim</b> , miráre.	<b>Born</b> , náto. <i>Pl.</i> : náti, <i>m.</i> ; náte, <i>f.</i>
<b>Air</b> , ária.	<b>Boy</b> , ragázze.
<b>All</b> , tútto.	<b>Branch</b> , rámo.
<b>Alone</b> , sólo.	<b>Bread</b> , páne, <i>m.</i>
<b>Although</b> , sebbène.	<b>Brother</b> , fratéllo, <i>m.</i>
<b>Always</b> , sêmpre.	<b>Bubble</b> , vescichétta.
<b>Amaze</b> , meravigliáre.	<b>But</b> , ma.
<b>America</b> , Amériica.	<b>By</b> , da. <i>By chance</i> = per cáso.
<b>An</b> , <i>see A.</i>	<b>Call</b> , chiamáre.
<b>Ancient</b> , antíco.	<b>Capital</b> , capitále, <i>f.</i>
<b>And</b> , e.	<b>Car</b> , vagóne, <i>m.</i>
<b>Another</b> , un áltro.	<b>Care</b> , cúra.
<b>April</b> , apríle, <i>m.</i>	<b>Carriage</b> , carròzza.
<b>Around</b> , intórno.	<b>Carry</b> , portáre.
<b>As</b> , cóme.	<b>Case</b> , cáso.
<b>As . . . as</b> , quánto, tánto . . . cóme.	<b>Ceiling</b> , pálco.
<b>Asia</b> , Ásia.	<b>Chance</b> , cáso. <i>By chance</i> = per cáso.
<b>At</b> , a.	<b>Charged</b> , cárico.
<b>Attach</b> , attaccáre.	<b>Charity</b> , carità, <i>f.</i>
<b>August</b> , agósto.	<b>Charles</b> , Cárlo.
<b>Be</b> , éssere, <i>irreg.</i> (53, a).	<b>Choose</b> , scégliere, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Beam</b> , tráve, <i>f. or m.</i>	<b>Christopher</b> , Cristóforo.
<b>Beast</b> , béstia.	<b>Circle</b> , tóndo.
<b>Beautiful</b> , béllo.	<b>City</b> , città, <i>f.</i>
<b>Because</b> , perchè.	<b>Cloud</b> , núvola.
<b>Begin</b> , cominciáre.	<b>Club</b> , bastóne, <i>m.</i>
<b>Believe</b> , crédere.	<b>Coat</b> , ábito.
<b>Big</b> , gróssó.	

<b>Collect</b> , raccògliere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Emmanuel</b> , Emanuèle.
<b>Columbus</b> , Colómbó.	<b>Emperor</b> , imperatóre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Come back</b> , tornáre.	<b>Empty</b> , vuòto.
<b>Companion</b> , compágno.	<b>End</b> , termináre.
<b>Confined</b> , tenúto.	<b>Enemy</b> , nemíco.
<b>Construct</b> , costruìre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Escape</b> , scappáre.
<b>Continue</b> , seguitáre.	<b>Europe</b> , Európa.
<b>Contrary</b> , contráριο.	<b>Even</b> , ánche.
<b>Cool</b> , raffreddársi.	<b>Ever</b> , mái.
<b>Corner</b> , cánto.	<b>Every</b> , ógni.
<b>Country</b> , paése, <i>m.</i>	<b>Everything</b> , tútto.
<b>Cover</b> , coprìre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Everywhere</b> , per tútto.
<b>Creature</b> , animále, <i>m.</i>	<b>Eye</b> , <i>noun</i> , òcchio.
<b>Crumb</b> , bríciola.	<b>Eye</b> , <i>vb.</i> , occhiáre.
<b>Crush</b> , schiacciáre.	<b>Fall</b> , cadúta.
<b>Dark</b> , búio.	<b>Family</b> , famíglia, <i>f.</i>
<b>Day</b> , giòrno.	<b>Far</b> , lontáno, <i>adv. and adj.</i>
<b>December</b> , dicêmbre, <i>m.</i>	<b>Father</b> , pádre, <i>m.</i> , bábbó.
<b>Dense</b> , dênso.	<b>February</b> , febbráio.
<b>Department</b> , dipartiménto.	<b>Fief</b> , féudo.
<b>Discover</b> , scopríre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Fifth</b> , quínto.
<b>Distance</b> , distánza.	<b>Find</b> , trováre.
<b>Divide</b> , dividere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Finger</b> , díto. <i>Pl. díta, f.</i>
<b>Do</b> , fáre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Fire</b> , fuòco.
<b>Dominion</b> , domínio.	<b>First</b> , prímo. <i>Adv., prima.</i>
<b>Door</b> , úscio.	<b>Five</b> , cínque.
<b>Down</b> , giù.	<b>Flat</b> , piátto.
<b>Dream</b> , sognáre.	<b>Flee</b> , fuggíre.
<b>Drop</b> , gócciola. <i>Drop by drop</i> = a gócciola a gócciola.	<b>Flower</b> , fióre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Duke</b> , dúca, <i>m.</i>	<b>Fly</b> , voláre.
<b>Dungeon</b> , cárcere, <i>f.</i>	<b>Food</b> , mangiáre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Dust</b> , pólvore, <i>f.</i>	<b>For</b> , per. <i>For yourself (conjunctive)</i> = vi, si.
<b>Barn</b> , guadagnáre.	<b>Form</b> , formáre.
<b>Barth</b> , térra.	<b>Fort</b> , fortézza.
<b>Eight hundred</b> , ottocénto.	<b>Forth</b> , fuòri.
<b>Eighty</b> , ottánta.	<b>Forty</b> , quaránta.
<b>Either</b> . . . or, o . . . o.	<b>Four</b> , quáttro.

<b>Four hundred</b> , quattrocénto.	<b>I</b> , io.
<b>France</b> , Fráncia, <i>f</i> .	<b>If</b> , se.
<b>Friday</b> , venerdì, <i>m</i> .	<b>Imagine</b> , immagináre.
<b>Friend</b> , amíco, <i>m</i> , 23, <i>c</i> , (2).	<b>In</b> , in.
<b>From</b> , da.	<b>Indeed</b> , davvéro.
<b>Fruit</b> , frútto.	<b>Inhabit</b> , abitáre.
<b>Furniture</b> , mobília.	<b>Inside</b> , didéntro.
<b>Genoa</b> , Génova.	<b>Instance</b> , esêmpio.
<b>Give</b> , dáre, <i>irreg</i> .	<b>Intense</b> , vivo.
<b>Go</b> , andáre, <i>irreg</i> .	<b>Intention</b> , intenzióne, <i>f</i> .
<b>Good</b> , buóno.	<b>Into</b> , in.
<b>Grain</b> , gráno.	<b>It</b> , lo, la, égli, gli.
<b>Great</b> , gránde.	<b>Italian</b> , italiáno.
<b>Ground</b> , têrra.	<b>Italy</b> , Itália, <i>f</i> .
<b>Grove</b> , boschéttó.	<b>Its</b> , súo, súa.
<b>Grow up</b> , venír su, <i>irreg</i> .	<b>Itself</b> , si.
<b>Gun</b> , schiòppo, fucile, <i>m</i> .	<b>Jailer</b> , carceriére, <i>m</i> .
<b>Hand</b> , máno, <i>f</i> .	<b>January</b> , gennáio.
<b>Happen</b> , accadére, <i>irreg</i> .	<b>July</b> , lúglio.
<b>Hardly</b> , appéna.	<b>June</b> , giúgno.
<b>Hasten</b> , affrettársi.	<b>King</b> , re, <i>m</i> .
<b>Hate</b> , odiáre.	<b>Know</b> , sapére, <i>irreg</i> , conóscere (= <i>be acquainted with</i> ), <i>irreg</i> .
<b>Have</b> , avére, <i>irreg</i> . (53, <i>b</i> ).	<b>Land</b> , paése, <i>m</i> ., têrra.
<b>He</b> , égli, lúi.	<b>Large</b> , gránde.
<b>Heat</b> , cáldo.	<b>Last</b> , último ( <i>precedes noun</i> ).
<b>Her</b> , la, le, léi.	<i>Last year</i> = l' áнно scórso.
<b>Herb</b> , érba.	<b>Latter</b> , quéstó. <i>The latter</i> = qué sti, <i>m. sing</i> .
<b>Here</b> , qua.	<b>Leaf</b> , fôglia.
<b>High</b> , álto.	<b>Leap-year</b> , bisestíle, <i>m</i> .
<b>Him</b> , lo, gli, lúi. <i>To him</i> = gli, a lúi.	<b>Learn</b> , imparáre.
<b>Himself</b> , si.	<b>Left</b> , sinístra.
<b>His</b> , súo.	<b>Lid</b> , têsto.
<b>History</b> , stôria.	<b>Lift</b> , solleváre.
<b>Holiday</b> , fêsta.	<b>Light</b> , lúce, <i>f</i> .
<b>Honest</b> , onêsto.	<b>Like</b> , cóme.
<b>However</b> , tuttavía.	<b>Little</b> (= <i>small</i> ), píccolo, piccíno.
<b>Hunter</b> , cacciatóre, <i>m</i> .	

<b>Little</b> (= <i>a small quantity</i> ), pôco.	<b>Not</b> , non.
<i>Little by little</i> = a pôco a pôco.	<b>November</b> , novèmbre.
<b>Live</b> , vivere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Now</b> , óra.
<b>Loaded</b> , cárico.	<b>Object</b> , oggétto.
<b>Lorraine</b> : <i>of Lorraine</i> = lorenése.	<b>Observe</b> , osserváre.
<b>Loud</b> , fórte.	<b>Oceanica</b> , Oceánia.
<b>Low</b> , báссо.	<b>October</b> , ottób're.
<b>Lower</b> , abbassáre.	<b>Of</b> , di. <i>Of them</i> = <b>de</b> .
<b>Man</b> , uòmo, <i>pl.</i> uòmini.	<b>On</b> , sópra, su ( <i>before vow.</i> , sur).
<b>Many</b> , mólti, <i>m.</i> , mólte, <i>f.</i>	<b>One</b> , úno.
<b>March</b> , mázzo.	<b>One's self</b> , si.
<b>Mask</b> , máschera.	<b>Only</b> , sólo ( <i>adj.</i> ), non . . . che ( <i>adv.</i> ).
<b>May</b> , mággio.	<b>Opposite</b> , oppósto.
<b>Me</b> , mi, me.	<b>Or</b> , o.
<b>Melon</b> , cocómero.	<b>Other</b> , áltro.
<b>Merchant</b> , mercánte, <i>m.</i>	<b>Ought</b> , dovére, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Middle</b> , mézzo.	<b>Out</b> , fuòri.
<b>Mignonette</b> , amoríno.	<b>Outside</b> , difuòri, <i>m.</i>
<b>Mine</b> , mío.	<b>Over there</b> , laggiù.
<b>Moisture</b> , umidità, <i>f.</i>	<b>Face</b> , páссо.
<b>Monday</b> , lunedì, <i>m.</i>	<b>Parents</b> , genitóri, <i>m. pl.</i>
<b>Month</b> , mése, <i>m.</i>	<b>Paris</b> , Parígi.
<b>Moon</b> , lúna.	<b>Parrot</b> , pappagállo.
<b>More</b> , più.	<b>Part</b> , párt'e, <i>f.</i>
<b>Mortify</b> , mortificáre.	<b>Peasant</b> , contadíno.
<b>Most</b> , il più.	<b>Perfectly</b> , próprio.
<b>Mr.</b> , signór.	<b>Perhaps</b> , fórse.
<b>My</b> , mío.	<b>Persuade</b> , persuadére, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Name</b> , nóme, <i>m.</i>	<b>Philip</b> , Filíppo.
<b>Napoleon</b> , Napoleóne.	<b>Place</b> , luògo.
<b>Near</b> , vicíno a.	<b>Placed</b> , pósto.
<b>Need</b> , bisógno.	<b>Plainly</b> , schiettaménte.
<b>Never</b> , non . . . mái.	<b>Plant</b> , piánta.
<b>Nice</b> , gentíle.	<b>Point</b> , púnto.
<b>Ninety</b> , novánta.	<b>Poor</b> , pòvero.
<b>No</b> , no.	<b>Pot</b> , péntola.
<b>Nobody</b> , nessúno.	<b>Present</b> , presentáre.
<b>Nor</b> , nè.	

<b>Prevent</b> , impedíre.	<b>Seven</b> , sètte.
<b>Principle</b> , principio.	<b>Shake</b> , scuòtere, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Prison</b> , prigióne, <i>f.</i>	<b>Ship</b> , náve, <i>f.</i>
<b>Prisoner</b> , prigioniero.	<b>Shoot</b> , bárbá.
<b>Profession</b> , professione, <i>f.</i>	<b>Short</b> , córto.
<b>Purpose</b> , úso.	<b>Show off</b> , far vedére, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Quantity</b> , quantità, <i>f.</i>	<b>Side</b> , párté, <i>f.</i>
<b>Question</b> , domándá.	<b>Silence</b> , silénzio.
<b>Rain</b> , pióggia.	<b>Sinister</b> , sinistro.
<b>Raise</b> , leváre.	<b>Sir</b> , signóre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Rare</b> , ráro.	<b>Sixty</b> , sessánta.
<b>Recognized</b> , conosciúto.	<b>Sky</b> , ciélo.
<b>Relate</b> , raccontáre.	<b>Small</b> , piccòlo, piccínó.
<b>Remain</b> , rimanére, <i>irreg.</i> , restáre.	<b>Smoke</b> , fúmo.
<b>Repeat</b> , ripêtere.	<b>So</b> , cosí.
<b>Reply</b> , rispóndere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>So as to</b> , per.
<b>Resolve</b> , risciógliere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Some</b> , quálche.
<b>Rest</b> , posáre.	<b>Somebody else</b> , qualchedun' ál- tro.
<b>Right</b> , déstra.	<b>Sometimes</b> , qualchevólta.
<b>Rise</b> , salíre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>So much</b> , tánto.
<b>Room</b> , stánza.	<b>Son</b> , figlio.
<b>Root</b> , radíce, <i>f.</i>	<b>Sort</b> , sòrta.
<b>Round</b> , rotóndo.	<b>Spaniard</b> , spagnuòlo.
<b>Rule</b> , signoría.	<b>Speak</b> , parláre.
<b>Sacrifice</b> , sacrificio.	<b>Spider</b> , rágno, rágnolo.
<b>Sail</b> , navigáre.	<b>Sprouted</b> , germogliáto.
<b>Sailor</b> , marináro.	<b>Stalk</b> , fústó.
<b>Same</b> , stéssó ( <i>precedes noun</i> ).	<b>Star</b> , stélla.
<b>Satisfy</b> , contentáre.	<b>Steam</b> , vapóre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Saturday</b> , sábató.	<b>Straight</b> , dirítto.
<b>Say</b> , díre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Study</b> , <i>noun</i> , stúdio.
<b>Sea</b> , máre, <i>m.</i>	<b>Study</b> , <i>vb.</i> , studiáre.
<b>Second</b> , secóndo.	<b>Sun</b> , sóle, <i>m.</i>
<b>See</b> , vedére, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Sunday</b> , doménica.
<b>Seed</b> , séme, <i>m.</i>	<b>Support</b> , mantenére, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Sent</b> , mandáto.	<b>Surprised</b> , sorprésó.
<b>September</b> , settémbre, <i>m.</i>	<b>Surround</b> , circondáre.
<b>Service</b> , servízio.	

<b>Table</b> , távola.	<b>Tuscan</b> , toscáno.
<b>Take</b> , prèndere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Twelve</b> , dódici.
<b>Tear</b> , raschiàre.	<b>Twenty-eight</b> , ventòtto.
<b>Than</b> , che, di.	<b>Twenty-nine</b> , ventinòve.
<b>Thanks</b> , grázie, <i>f. pl.</i>	<b>Twig</b> , ramoscélllo.
<b>That</b> , <i>conj.</i> , che.	<b>Two</b> , dúe.
<b>That</b> , <i>rel. pron.</i> , che.	<b>Under</b> , sótto.
<b>That</b> , <i>demons. pron.</i> , quélllo.	<b>Unfortunate</b> , infelíce.
<b>The</b> , il, lo, la, i, gli, le.	<b>Unhappy</b> , sventuráto.
<b>Them</b> , li, le, lóro. <i>Of them</i> = ne.	<b>Union</b> , unióne, <i>f.</i>
<b>Then</b> , pòi.	<b>Unite</b> , raccògliere, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>There</b> , là, lì.	<b>Until</b> , <i>prep.</i> , fino a.
<b>Therefore</b> , però.	<b>Until</b> , <i>conj.</i> , finchè . . . non.
<b>They</b> , éssi, ésse, lóro.	<b>Us</b> , nói, ci ( <i>conjunctive</i> ).
<b>Thick</b> , gróssso.	<b>Usual</b> , usáto.
<b>Thing</b> , còsa.	<b>Vapor</b> , vapóre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Think</b> , pensàre.	<b>Vegetable</b> , vegetábile, <i>m.</i>
<b>Third</b> , tèrzo.	<b>Very</b> , mólto, tánto.
<b>Thirtieth</b> , trentésimo.	<b>Victor</b> , Vittòrio.
<b>Thirty</b> , trénta.	<b>Villa</b> , vília.
<b>Thirty-first</b> , trentésimo prímto.	<b>Village</b> , villággio.
<b>Thirty-one</b> , trentúno, trentún.	<b>Water</b> , ácqua.
<b>This</b> , quésto.	<b>Way</b> (= <i>manner</i> ), maniéra.
<b>Thousand</b> , mílle.	<b>We</b> , nói.
<b>Three</b> , tre.	<b>Web</b> , téla.
<b>Three hundred</b> , trecénto.	<b>Wednesday</b> , mercoledì, <i>m.</i>
<b>Thursday</b> , giovedì, <i>m.</i>	<b>Week</b> , settimána.
<b>Thus</b> , cosí.	<b>What</b> , <i>interrog. and exclam.</i>
<b>Time</b> , ( <i>Ex. 2</i> ) vòlta; ( <i>Ex. 18 and 20</i> ) tèmpo.	che.
<b>To</b> , a. <i>To him</i> = gli.	<b>What</b> , <i>rel.</i> , quélllo che.
<b>Together</b> , insième.	<b>When</b> , quándo.
<b>Too</b> (= <i>also</i> ), ánche.	<b>Where</b> , dóve.
<b>Too</b> (= <i>excessively</i> ), tróppo.	<b>Which</b> , che.
<b>Tree</b> , álbero.	<b>While</b> , méntre.
<b>Trunk</b> , trónco.	<b>Who</b> , <i>rel.</i> , che.
<b>Tuesday</b> , martedì, <i>m.</i>	<b>Whom</b> , <i>rel.</i> , cúí.
<b>Furn</b> , giráre.	<b>Willingly</b> , volentiéri.
	<b>Wind</b> , vènto.

**Window, finêstra.**

**With, con.**

**Without, sênza.**

**Wood, bôsko.**

**Word, parôla.**

**Working-day, giòrno di lavôro.**

**World, móndo.**

**Year, áнно.**

**Yes, già.**

**You, vói, vi, Lêi, la, le. *To you***  
= vi, le.

**Your, vôstro, Súo.**

**Yoursself, vi, si. *For yourself***  
= vi, si.



## APPENDIX.

---

### ADDITIONAL NOTES ON PRONUNCIATION.

[The numbers prefixed to the following notes refer to the paragraphs of the first chapter in this book.]

1. The Tuscan names of the letters are : *a, bi, ci, di, é, êffe, gi, ácca, i, jé* or *i lúngo, êlle, êmme, ênne, ó, pi, cu, érre, êsse, ti, u, vu* or *vi, zêta* (with *z* pronounced *dz*). They do not change in the plural. Their gender is not fixed ; in general those ending in *a* or *e* are considered as feminine, the others as masculine. *K, x, y* are *cáppa, iccase, tpsilon*, all masculine.

2. *a.* The sounds *á, ê, ó*, followed by a single consonant, are somewhat longer than the other vowels : for instance, in *dáto, fêro, óvo* the accented *a, e, o* are longer than in *dáttero, véro, óve*. Final accented vowels sound particularly short : as in *amò, beltà, caffè*.

*β.* In forming *i* the mouth should be made as broad as possible from side to side. For *u* and *ó* the lips should be puckered. For *a* and *é* the mouth should be opened very wide.

3. *a.* If an adverb in *-mente* is formed from an adjective containing *é* or *ó*, this vowel has, in the adverb, a secondary accent, and retains its open sound : as (*brève*) *brèvemente*, "briefly"; (*nobile*) *nòbilmente*, "nobly." Furthermore, *é* and *ó* retain their quality in seeming compounds that consist, in reality, of two or more separate words : as *tostochè = tòstoché = tòsto che*, "as soon as."

*β.* Preterites and past participles in *-esi, -eso, -osi, -oso* have a close *e* or *o* ; except *chièsi* (also *chiési*), *esplòsi, esplòso, lèsi* (not used), *lèso*.

γ. In the suffixes *-eccio* (-a), *-esco* (-a), *-ese*, *-essa*, *-etto* (-a), *-ezzo* (-a), *-mente*, and *-mento* the *e* is always close; while in the diminutive suffix *-ello* (-a), and in the endings *-ente*, *-enza*, *-erio* (or *-ero*), and *-esimo* (-a) it is open: as *inglèse*, "English"; *probabilmente*, "probably"; *prudente*, "prudent"; *ventésimo*, "twentieth."

δ. In the endings *-oio*, *-one*, *-ore*, and in the suffix *-oso* (-a) the *o* is close; while in the ending *-orio*, and in *-occio* (-a), *-otto* (-a), and *-ozzo* (-a), used as suffixes to nouns or adjectives, it is open: as *vassóio*, "tray"; *amóre*, "love"; *romitório*, "hermitage"; *casótta*, "good-sized house."

ε. In the following cases accented *e* or *o* may have either the close or the open sound: in *Giorgio*, *maestra*, *maestro*, *nego* (from *negàre*), *neve*, *organo*, *scendere*, *senza*, *siete* and *sono* (from *èssere*), *spegnere*, *Stefano*, *vendere*; and in the conditional endings *-esti*, *-emmo*, *-este*. The present subjunctive forms *dieno*, *steno*, *stieno* are pronounced also *dièno*, *sièno*, *stièno*.

ζ. In poetry we often find *è* for *iè*, *ò* for *uò*: as *ven* = *viène*, "he comes"; *cor* = *cuòre*, "heart."

4. C. α. Between two vowels, of which the second is *e* or *i*, single *c* and single *g* are, in ordinary Tuscan speech, pronounced respectively like *sh* in "ship" and *si* in "vision": as *pàce*, "peace"; *stagiónè*, "season."

β. Between two vowels, of which the second is *a*, *o*, or *u*, a single *c* is, in popular Tuscan speech, sounded nearly like English *h*: as *poco* (*póho*), "little"; *di questa cosa* (*di hwésta hòsa*), "of this thing." This pronunciation is regarded as vulgar.

J. Some writers use *j*, except after a consonant, for the *i* that is pronounced *y*: as *jeri* for *ièri*, "yesterday"; *pajo* for *pàio*, "pair." It is sometimes used also for final *i* in the plural of words in unaccented *-io*: as *specchj* (also *specchi* and occasionally *specchii*) for *spècchi*, "mirrors," plural of *spècchio*.

Z. Aside from verbs in *-izzare*, *z* and *zz* have the value *dz* in the following words and their derivatives: —

arzilla	frizzo	magazzino	romanzo	zêlo
azzurro	garzone	mânzo	ronzio	zenft
barzellétta	gazzella	mêzzo	rôzzo	zêro
bizza	gazzétta	orizzonte	zaffiro	zêta
brézza	gônzo	ôrzo	zaffrone	zinco
brônzo	Lâzzaro	pênzolo	zanzâra	zodíaco
donzêlla	lazzaréto	prânzo	zêbra	zôlla
dozzina	lâzzo	ribrézzo	zêffiro	zôna

also in all derivatives of the Greek *zoos*, and in many uncommon words.

5. In pronouncing *gli* and *gn* the point of the tongue should remain behind the lower teeth : as *figlio*, "son"; *ogni*, "every."

6. If one of the words mentioned below, or any oxytone ending in a vowel, is closely followed by a word beginning with a consonant, this consonant is, in Tuscany, generally pronounced double. The words are : \* —

a	dì, <i>day</i>	giù	o §	sópra
che	di', <i>say</i>	ha	più	sta †
chi	e	ho	qua	sto
ciò	è	infra	qualche	su
cóme	fa †	intra	qui	te †
cóntra	fè, <i>faith</i>	là	re	tra
da	fe' = fêce	li	sa	tre
dà, <i>gives</i>	fo	ma	se, <i>if</i>	tu
da', <i>give</i>	fra	me †	sè	va †
do	fù	mo' = mōdo	si	vo = vādo
dóve	già	nè	so	vo' = vōglio

Ex. : *verrà da me domani* (*verràddammèddomàni*), "he will come to my house to-morrow." In such cases *c* is, of course, never pronounced like *h* (see 4, C, β).

\* The materials for this list were taken from D' Ovidio's article in Gröber's *Grundriss der romanischen Philologie*, p. 496.

† Both the imperative sing. and the pres. ind. third sing.

‡ The disjunctive form.

§ Both the conjunction "or" and the interrogative particle.

## INFLECTIONS OF THE VOICE.

1. Italian speech is at once smoother and less monotonous than American: it is less interrupted by breathings, and it has far greater variations of pitch. In order to speak or read Italian well, an American must learn to breathe in speaking as he does in singing; he must inhale deeply at the beginning of the clause, and not stop again until he reaches the end of it. The following directions may be of use; they are based on the Tuscan pronunciation, and particularly on that of Siena.

2. *a.* The simplest inflection in a declarative sentence is as follows: at the beginning the voice is pitched low; it rises in the middle (in earnest conversation often to a falsetto), and falls again at the end. The most emphatic word generally receives the highest tone; if there are no words after it to complete the cadence, the first words of the phrase are often repeated at the end: as *me lo dicono tutti me lo dicono* ("they all tell me so"), where the *u* of *tutti* is an octave higher than the beginning and the close of the sentence.

*β.* When there is a pause on some not particularly emphatic word before the main verb, that word has a slight circumflex accent, the voice rising about one semitone and falling about three: as *fuori di città ^ c' è una bellissima villa \* ("outside the city there's a beautiful villa"), where *bellissima* has the high pitch, and the *a* of *città* has the circumflex. This accent is generally heard whenever modifying clauses or phrases precede the main clause.

*γ.* Almost all declarative sentences are made up chiefly of these two inflections, the long rise and fall and the short circumflex. Americans must avoid breaking up their sentences by meaningless falling tones. The fall occurs in Italian, as in English, on a very emphatic word, and at the end of a sentence. It is used, also, with a verb of saying or thinking, followed by a direct quotation;

and with any word or phrase used as a vocative, except in loud calling (see 4,  $\beta$ ): as *allóra chiàma Alfrèdo e gli dice* \ : *Bambino* \ , *dimmì la verità* \ (*Grammar*, Exercise 17), where the syllables *fre*, *bam*, and *dìm* have the highest pitch.

3.  $\alpha$ . Questions to which the answer may be "yes" or "no" have either one of two circumflex accents: in the first the voice rises about five semitones and falls one; in the second, which is sometimes used in reading and in polite phrases, the voice rises and falls about an octave. Ex.: *l' hái visto* ("have you seen him?"), where the pitches of *l' hái*, *vi*, and *sto* may be represented by the notes *do*, *fa*, *mi*; *ha bèn dormito* ("did you sleep well?"), where *mi* is an octave higher than *do* and *to*. The former accent may be heard in the Irish pronunciation of English.

$\beta$ . These inflections are nearly always confined to the last few syllables of the sentence. In some questions, however, they appear twice, generally occurring first on the verb; and occasionally the circumflex on the verb is the only one.

$\gamma$ . Questions that cannot be answered by "yes" or "no" usually begin high, the pitch depending on the emphasis. The voice then falls, but generally rises again at the last syllable, going up about three semitones: as *o còme* \ *hái fátto* / ("how did you do it?"). This accent is common among the Irish, and may be heard in England. The final rise is, however, often omitted, especially in very short sentences and in polite phrases: as *còme sta* \ ("how do you do?").

4.  $\alpha$ . Exclamations of surprise begin very high, and sink rapidly: as *sènti* \ ("no!"\*) ; *un affàr di niènte* \ ("you don't say so!"\*), where *un* has the main stress; *per mìo bacco* ("I want to know!"\*), with the accent on *per*.

$\beta$ . In calling to persons at a distance, the Tuscans sing rather than speak; the usual tune is *do*, *la*, *sol*, the accented syllable being highest: as *Agostìna* ("Augustine!"); *partènza* ("all aboard!").

---

\* Popular New England equivalents.



# INDEX.

[The numbers refer to paragraphs. *Ap. N.* means "Appendix, Additional Notes on Pronunciation"; *Ap. V.* stands for "Appendix, Inflections of the Voice."]

**A** (letter): 2; *Ap. N.*, 2.

**A** (preposition): 79; 79, *b*, *k*.

**Accent**: 7; 47; 48; 84; 92, *c*;  
*Ap. V.*

**Accents**: 3; 7.

**Address** (Forms of): 52.

**Adjectives**: 26-34.

Comparison: 31-34.

Gender: 26; 28.

Number: 26; 29.

Position: 27.

Used as nouns: 20; 30.

**Adverbs**: 80-85.

*Ci, vi*: 47, *a*; 84.

Comparison: 80, 2.

Manner: 85.

*Ne*: 47, *a*; 56, *b*.

*Neur*: 83.

*Not, non*: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*.

*Only*: 82.

Position: 80, 1.

*So*: 85, *a*.

**All**: 87.

**Alphabet**: 1; *Ap. N.*, 1.

**Altrui**: 91, *d*.

**Any**: 88.

**Articles**: 9-16.

Definite: see **Definite**.

Indefinite: see **Indefinite**.

**Augmentatives**: 35-37.

**Auxiliary Verbs**: 53-57.

*Avere*: 53, *b*; 54, 3.

*Essere*: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3.

Compound tenses: 54; 56.

Modal auxiliaries: 57.

**Avere**: 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b*; 92, 5.

**Be**: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3; 54, *a*, *c*, *d*, *f*;  
92, 126.

**Bello**: 29, *c*.

**Both**: 38, 4; 91.

**Buono**: 29, *c*.

**Can**: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.

**Ci** (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.

**Ci** (pron.): 47-50.

**Close Vowels**: 3; *Ap. N.*, 3.

**Comparison**: 31-34; 80, 2.

Adjectives: 31-34.

Adverbs: 80, 2.

Irregular: 31, *a*; 80, 2.

**Compound Tenses**: 54; 56; 73;  
75.

**Conditional**: 54, 2; 68, *b*; 76; 77;  
92, *c*.

Contracted: 65; 66, 1; 92, *c*.

**Conjugation**: 53-68; 92.

First: 59.

Second: 60.

Third: 60.

- Fourth:** 61.  
**Variations:** 63; 66, *a*; 68.  
**Irregular verbs:** 64-68; 92.  
**Auxiliary verbs:** 53-57.  
**Compound tenses:** 54; 56.  
**Compound verbs:** 67, *a*; 93, *a*.  
**Conjunctions:** 78.  
     With subjunctive: 77, *d*; 78, *a, b*.  
**Consonants:** 4-6; Ap. N., 4-6.  
**Contraction:** 12; 23 (†); 50 (\*);  
     63, *d*; 65; 66, *i*; 68, *a*.  
**Da:** 79, *c, f, g*.  
**Dates:** 38, *b*; 39, *b*.  
**Definite Article:** 10-13.  
     Form: 10-12.  
     Use: 12, *a*; 13; 38, *b*; 39, *a*;  
         45; 69; 70.  
**Di:** 12; 17; 79, *b, 3, f, h, j*.  
**Diminutives:** 35-37.  
**Do:** 54, *g*.  
**Double Letters:** 6.  
**Doubling:** 48, *d*; 93, *a*; Ap. N., 6.  
**E (letter):** 3; 68, *i, j*; Ap. N., 3.  
**E (conjunction):** 78; 78, *c*.  
**Ecco:** 48, *e*; 84, *a*.  
**Essere:** 53, *a*; 54, *i, 3*; 54, *a, c, d*;  
     92, 126.  
**Exclamations:** 43, *b*; 79, *b*; Ap.  
     V., 4.  
**For:** 79, *e*.  
**Fractions:** 39, *c*.  
**Future:** 54, 2; 68, *c*; 74; 77.  
     Contracted: 65; 66, *i*.  
**Gender:** 9-11; 14-15; 18-21; 26;  
     28.  
**Grande:** 29, *c*.  
**H:** 4; 22, *a*; 23, *a, c*; 59, *a*.  
**Have:** 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b, h*; 57, *a*;  
     92, 5.  
**Here:** 84.  
**I (letter):** 2; 22, *b*; 23, *b*; 59, *a*;  
     60; 92, *f*; Ap. N., 2.  
**I (euphonic):** 79; 81.  
**Imperative:** 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.  
**Imperfect:**  
     Form: 63; 63, *c*; 65; 68, *a, h*.  
     Use: 54, *d, e*; 73; 75. [77, *c*.  
**Impersonal Verbs:** 51; 51, *h*;  
**Indefinite Article:** 14-16.  
     Form: 14-15.  
     Use: 16; 38, *i*; 43, *b*.  
**Infinitive:** 48, *b*; 58; 69-72.  
     Contracted: 65.  
**Inflections of the voice:** Ap. V.  
**Interrogation:** see **Questions**.  
**Issimo (suffix):** 35, *a*.  
**It:** 47; 51; 51, *h*.  
**Letters:** 1; Ap. N., 1.  
**May:** see **Modal Auxiliaries**.  
**Modal Auxiliaries:** 57.  
**Moods:** 57; 69-77; 78, *a*.  
     Conditional: 54, 2; 65; 66, *i*;  
         68, *b*; 76; 77.  
     Imperative: 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.  
     Infinitive: 48, *b*; 58; 65; 69-72.  
     Participle: 54, *a, b*; 62; 63, *d*;  
         69-71.  
     Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.  
**Must:** see **Modal Auxiliaries**.  
**Myself, thyself, etc.:** 47, 2; 51, *c*.  
**Ne (adv.):** 47, *a*; 56, *b*; 84.  
**Ne (pron.):** 47, 3; 48; 49; 88; 89.

- Neuter Verbs:** 54, 3; 56, *a*.  
**Never:** 83.  
**Non:** 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*.  
**Not:** 80, 1; 81.  
**Nouns:** 17-25.  
     Gender: 18-21.  
     Number: 22-25.  
**Number:** 9-11; 22-25; 29.  
**Numerals:** 38-40.  
     Cardinal: 38.  
     Ordinal: 39.  
**O** (letter): 3; 59, *b*; Ap. N., 3.  
**O** (conjunction): 78; 78, *c*.  
**Old Forms:** 19(†); 23(†); 47(\*);  
     48, *d*; 50(\*); 63, *d*; 66, *a*;  
     68; 92; Ap. N., 3, *ç*.  
**One** (indefinite): 55; 86.  
**Only:** 82.  
**Open Vowels:** 3; Ap. N., 3.  
**Ought:** see **Modal Auxiliaries**.  
**Participle:** 54, *a*, *b*; 62; 63, *d*;  
     69-71.  
     Past: 54, *a*, *b*; 63, *d*; 71, *c*.  
     Present: 62; 69-71.  
**Partitive Genitive:** 12, *a*; 88; 89.  
**Passive:** 54, 1; 54, *f*; 55; 56, *c*.  
**Perfect Tenses:** 54, 3; 56; 73;  
     75.  
**Personal Pronouns:** 46-52.  
     Conjunctive: 47-50.  
         Form: 47; 48, *c*, *d*; 50;  
             52, 1.  
         Position: 48; 49.  
     Disjunctive: 51-52.  
         Omission: 51, 2; 51, *h*.  
         Use: 51; 51, 1; 51, *a*, *b*, *h*.  
**Pitch:** Ap. V.  
**Plural:** 22-25; 29.  
**Irregular:** 23, *d*; 25.  
**Words in -co and -go:** 23, *c*.  
**Poetic Forms:** see **Old**.  
**Possessive:** 17; 45; 52, 1.  
**Prefixes:** 93, *a*.  
**Prepositions:** 79.  
     *Da:* 79, *c*, *f*, *g*.  
     *To:* 79, *a*, *b*. [74.  
**Present:** 65; 66, 4; 68, *f*, *g*; 73;  
**Preterite:** 60; 65; 66, 2, 3; 68,  
     *d*, *e*; 75.  
**Preterite Perfect:** 54, 3; 75.  
**Pronouns:** 41-52; 86-91.  
     Demonstrative: 42.  
     Indefinite: 86-91.  
     Interrogative, 43.  
     Personal: see **Personal**.  
     Possessive: see **Possessive**.  
     Reciprocal: see **Reciprocal**.  
     Reflexive: see **Reflexive**.  
     Relative: 44.  
**Pronunciation:** 1-8; Ap. N., 1-6;  
     Ap. V.  
**Quantity:** 2; Ap. N., 2.  
**Qualche:** 29, *b*; 89.  
**Questions:** 43; 51, 2; 77, *f*, *g*;  
     79, *b*; 81, *a*; Ap. V., 3.  
**Reciprocal pronouns and verbs:**  
     47, 2; 48; 49; 50; 51, 3;  
     51, *f*; 52, 1; 56, *b*.  
**Reflexive Pronouns:** 47, 2; 48;  
     49; 50; 51, 3; 52, 1; 55;  
     56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.  
**Reflexive Verbs:** 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*;  
     86.  
**Santo:** 29, *c*.  
**Shall:** 54, 2; 57.

**Should:** 54, 2; 57; 76; 77.

**Si:** 47-50; 52; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.

**So:** 85, *a*.

**Some:** 89.

**Spelling:** 1-8.

**Subjunctive:** 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.

**Suffixes:** 35-37; 85; Ap. N., 3.

**Syllables:** 8.

**Tenses:**

Compound: 54; 56; 73; 75.

Future: see **Future**.

Imperfect: see **Imperfect**.

Present: see **Present**.

Preterite: see **Preterite**.

**Than:** 33.

**There:** 84.

**Time of day:** 38, *c*.

**To:** 79, *a*, *b*.

**U (letter):** 2; Ap. N., 2.

**Verbs:** 53-77; 92; 93.

Auxiliary verbs: see **Auxiliary**.

Conjugation: see **Conjugation**.

Lists of irregular verbs: 92; 93.

Alphabetical: 93.

By conjugations: 92.

Moods: see **Moods**.

Tenses: see **Tenses**.

Regular verbs: 55-56; 59-63.

Irregular verbs: 64-68; 92.

Regular parts: 66.

Compound verbs: 67, *a*; 93, *a*.

Old forms: 63, *d*; 68; 92.

**Vi (adv.):** 47, *a*; 84.

**Vowels:** 2-3; Ap. N., 2-3.

**Whatever:** 44, *c*.

**Whoever:** 44, *c*.

**Will:** 54, 2; 57.

**Would:** 54, 2; 54, *c*; 57; 76; 77.

**You:** 52; 86.

## ADVERTISEMENTS



## Death's Modern Language Series.

### ROMANCE PHILOLOGY.

Introduction to Vulgar Latin (Grandgent). \$1.50.

Provençal Phonology and Morphology (Grandgent). \$1.50.

### SPANISH.

Bransby's Spanish Reader. 75 cts.

Hills and Ford's Spanish Grammar. \$1.25.

Edgren's Spanish Grammar. 80 cts.

Introducción a la lengua Castellana (Marion and des Garennes). 90 cts.

Ford's Exercises in Spanish Composition. 30 cts.

Ybarra's Practical Method in Spanish. Retail price, \$1.00.

Alarcon's El Capitán Veneno (Ford). 50 cts.

Alarcon's Novelas Cortas Escogidas (Remy). 50 cts.

Asensi's Victoria y otros cuentos (Ingraham). 50 cts.

Bardos Cubanos (Hills). 60 cts.

Cuentos Castellanos (Carter and Malloy). Vocabulary. 60 cts.

Cuentos Modernos (De Haan). Vocabulary. *In press.*

Echegaray's O Locura ó Santidad (Geddes and Josselyn). 40 cts.

First Spanish Readings (Matzke). Vocabulary. \$1.00.

Galdos's Mariela (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 90 cts.

Núñez de Arce's El Haz de Leña (Schwill). 65 cts.

Padre Isla's Lesage's Gil Blas (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. \$1.00.

Toboadá's Cuentos Alegres (Potter). Vocabulary. 50 cts.

Valdés's José (Davidson). 80 cts.

Valdés's La Alegría del Capitán Ribot (Morrison and Churchman).  
Notes and Vocabulary. 90 cts.

### ITALIAN.

Grandgent's Italian Grammar. 90 cts.

Grandgent's Italian Composition. 50 cts.

First Italian Readings (Bowen). Vocabulary. 90 cts.

Gheradi del Testa's L'oro e l'Orpello (Thurber). 25 cts.

Goldoni's Il vero Amico (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Goldoni's La Locandiera (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Goldoni's Un Curioso Accidente (Ford). 30 cts.

### SCANDINAVIAN.

Groth's Danish Grammar. \$1.00.

## Heath's Modern Language Series.

### FRENCH GRAMMARS AND READERS.

- Edgren's Compendious French Grammar. \$1.12.  
Edgren's French Grammar, Part I. 35 cts.  
Fraser and Squair's French Grammar. \$1.12.  
Fraser and Squair's Abridged French Grammar. \$1.10.  
Fraser and Squair's Elementary French Grammar. 90 cts.  
Grandgent's Essentials of French Grammar. \$1.00.  
Bruce's Grammaire Française. \$1.12.  
Grandgent's Short French Grammar. Help in pronunciation. 75 cts.  
Grandgent's French Lessons and Exercises. *First Year's Course for Grammar Schools.* 25 cts. *Second Year's Course.* 30 cts.  
Grandgent's Materials for French Composition. Each, 12 cts.  
Grandgent's French Composition. 50 cts.  
Bouvet's Exercises in Syntax and Composition. 75 cts.  
Clarke's Subjunctive Mood. An inductive treatise, with exercises. 50 cts.  
Hennequin's French Modal Auxiliaries. With exercises. 50 cts.  
Kimball's Materials for French Composition. Each, 12 cts.  
Brigham's Exercises in French Composition. Based on *Sans Famille*. 12 cts.  
Storr's Hints on French Syntax. With exercises. 30 cts.  
Marcou's French Review Exercises. 25 cts.  
Houghton's French by Reading. \$1.12.  
Hotchkiss' Le Primer Livre de Français. Boards. 35 cts.  
Fontaine's Livre de Lecture et de Conversation. 90 cts.  
Fontaine's Lectures Courantes. Can follow the above. \$1.00.  
Prisoners of the Temple (Guerber). For French Composition. 25 cts.  
Bruce's Dictées Françaises. 30 cts.  
Story of Cupid and Psyche (Guerber). For French Composition. 18 cts.  
Lyon and Larpent's Primary French Translation Book. 60 cts.  
Mansion's First Year French. For young beginners. 50 cts.  
Méthode Hénin. 50 cts.  
Snow and Lebon's Easy French. 60 cts.  
Super's Preparatory French Reader. 70 cts.  
Anecdotes Faciles (Super). For sight reading and conversation. 25 cts.  
French Fairy Tales (Joynes). Vocabulary and exercises. 35 cts.  
Bowen's First Scientific Reader. 90 cts.  
Davies' Elementary Scientific French Reader. 40 cts.  
Heath's French Dictionary. Retail price, \$1.50.

## Beath's Modern Language Series.

### ELEMENTARY FRENCH TEXTS.

- Ségur's Les Malheurs de Sophie.** Two episodes. Notes, vocabulary and exercises by Elizabeth M. White, High School, Brooklyn, N.Y. 45 cts.
- Saintine's Picciola.** With notes and vocabulary by Prof. O. B. Super. 45 cts.
- Mairêt's La Tâche du Petit Pierre.** Notes, vocabulary and exercises by Professor Super, Dickinson College. 35 cts.
- Bruno's Tour de la France par deux Enfants.** Notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, High School, New York City. 45 cts.
- Verne's L'Expédition de la Jeune Hardie (Lyon).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Gervais Un Cas de Conscience (Horsley).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Génin's Le Petit Tailleur Bouton (Lyon).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Assolant's Aventure du Célèbre Pierrot (Pain).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Muller's Grandes Découvertes Modernes.** Photography and Telegraphy. With notes, vocabulary and appendixes. 25 cts.
- Récits de Guerre et de Révolution (Minssen).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Bruno's Les Enfants Patriotes (Lyon).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Bedollière's La Mère Michel et son Chat (Lyon).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Legouvé and Labiche's La Cigale chez les Fourmis.** A comedy in one act, with notes, by W. H. Witherby. 20 cts.
- Labiche's La Grammaire (Levi).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Labiche's Le Voyage de M. Perrichon (Wells).** Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Labiche's La Poudre aux Yeux (Wells).** Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Dumas's Duc de Beaufort (Kitchen).** Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Dumas's Monte-Cristo (Spiers).** Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Assollant's Récits de la Vieille France.** Notes by E. B. Wanton. 25 cts.
- Berthet's Le Pacte de Famine.** With notes by B. B. Dickinson. 25 cts.
- Erckmann-Chatrian's L'Histoire d'un Paysan (Lyon).** 25 cts.
- France's Abeille (Lebon).** 25 cts.
- Moinaux's Les deux Sourds (Spiers).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- La Main Malheureuse (Guerber).** Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Enault's Le Chien du Capitaine (Fontaine).** Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Trois Contes Choisis par Daudet (Sanderson).** *Le Siège de Berlin, La dernière Classe, La Mule du Pape.* Vocabulary. 20 cts.
- Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Conscrit de 1813.** Notes and vocabulary by Professor Super, Dickinson College. 45 cts.
- Selections for Sight Translation.** Fifty fifteen-line extracts compiled by Miss Bruce of the High School, Newton, Mass. 15 cts.
- Laboulaye's Contes Bleus.** With notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, Central High School, Washington, D.C. 35 cts.
- Malot's Sans Famille (Spiers).** Vocabulary. 40 cts.

## Beath's Modern Language Series.

### INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- Dumas' La Tulipe Noire.** With notes by Professor C. Fontaine, Central High School, Washington, D.C. 40 cts. With vocabulary, 50 cts.
- Eckmann-Chatrian's Waterloo.** Abridged and annotated by Professor O. B. Super of Dickinson College. 35 cts.
- About's Le Roi des Montagnes (Logie).** 40 cts. Vocabulary, 50 cts.
- Pailleur's Le Monde où l'on s'ennuie.** A comedy with notes by Professor Pendleton of Bethany College, W. Va. 30 cts.
- Seuvestre's Le Mari de Mme de Solange.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. 20 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes, Vol. I.** Short modern stories, selected and edited, with notes, by C. Fontaine, Director of French in the High Schools of Washington, D.C. 60 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes, Vol. II.** Short stories as above. 60 cts.
- Fleurs de France.** A collection of short and choice French stories of recent date with notes by C. Fontaine, Washington, D.C. 35 cts.
- Sandeau's Mlle. de la Seiglière.** With introduction and notes by Professor Warren of Yale University. 30 cts.
- Seuvestre's Un Philosophe sous les Toits.** With notes by Professor Fraser of the University of Toronto. 50 cts. With vocab. 55 cts.
- Seuvestre's Les Confessions d'un Ouvrier.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. 30 cts.
- Augier's Le Gendre de M. Poirier.** One of the masterpieces of modern comedy. Edited by Professor B. W. Wells. 25 cts.
- Scribe's Bataille de Dames.** Edited by Professor B. W. Wells. 25 cts.
- Scribe's Le Verre d'eau.** Edited by Professor C. A. Eggert. 30 cts.
- Merimée's Colomba.** With notes by Professor J. A. Fontaine of Bryn Mawr College. 35 cts. With vocabulary, 45 cts.
- Merimée's Chronique du Règne de Charles IX.** With notes by Professor P. Desages, Cheltenham College, England. 25 cts.
- Musset's Pierre et Camille.** Edited by Professor O. B. Super. 20 cts.
- Jules Verne's Tour du Monde en quatre vingt jours.** Notes by Professor Edgren, University of Nebraska. 35 cts.
- Jules Verne's Vingt mille lieues sous la mer.** Notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, High School, Washington, D.C. 45 cts.
- Sand's La Mare au Diable (Sumichrast).** Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Sand's La Petite Fadette (Super).** Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- De Vigny's Le Cachet Rouge.** With notes by Professor Fortier of Tulane University. 20 cts.
- De Vigny's Le Canne de Jonc.** Edited by Professor Spiers, with introduction by Professor Cohn of Columbia University. 40 cts.
- Halévy's L'Abbé Constantin.** Edited with notes by Professor Thomas Logie. 30 cts. With vocabulary, 40 cts.
- Thier's Expédition de Bonaparte en Egypte.** With notes by Professor C. Fabregou, College of the City of New York. 25 cts.
- Gautier's Jettatura.** With introduction and notes by A. Schinz, Ph.D. of Bryn Mawr College. 30 cts.
- Guerber's Marie-Louise.** With notes. 25 cts.

## Beath's Modern Language Series.

### INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

**Lamartine's Scènes de la Révolution Française** (Super). With notes and vocabulary. 40 cts.

**Lamartine's Graziella** (Warren). 35 cts.

**Lamartine's Jeanne d'Arc** (Barrère). Vocabulary. 35 cts.

**Michelet: Extraits de l'histoire de France** (Wright). 30 cts.

**Hugo's La Chute**. From *Les Misérables* (Huss). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

**Hugo's Bug Jargal** (Boëlle). 40 cts.

**Hugo's Quatre-vingt-treize** (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 50 cts.

**Champfleury's Le Violon de Païence** (Bévenot). 25 cts.

**Gautier's Voyage en Espagne** (Steel). 25 cts.

**Balzac's Le Curé de Tours** (Carter). 25 cts.

**Balzac: Cinq Scènes de la Comédie Humaine** (Wells). 40 cts.

**Contes des Romanciers Naturalistes** (Dow and Skinner). With notes and vocabulary. 55 cts.

**Daudet's Le Petit Chose** (Super). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

**Daudet's La Belle-Nivernaise** (Boëlle). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

**Theuriet's Bigarreau** (Fontaine). 25 cts.

**Musset: Trois Comédies** (McKenzie). 30 cts.

**Maupassant: Huit Contes Choisis** (White). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

**Taine's L'Ancien Régime** (Giese). Vocabulary. 65 cts.

**Advanced Selections for Sight Translation**. Extracts, twenty to fifty lines long, compiled by Mme. T. F. Colin, Wellesley College. 15 cts.

**Dumas' La Question d'Argent** (Henning). 30 cts.

**Lesage's Gil Blas** (Sanderson). 40 cts.

**Sarcey's Le Siège de Paris** (Spiers). Vocabulary, 45 cts.

**About's La Mère de la Marquise** (Brush). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

**Chateaubriand's Atala** (Kuhns). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

**Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Juif Polonais** (Manley). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

**Fenillet's Roman d'un jeune homme pauvre** (Bruner). Vocab. 55 cts.

**Labiche's La Cagnotte** (Farnsworth). 25 cts.

**La Brète's Mon Oncle et Mon Curé** (Collin). Vocabulary. 45 cts.

**Meilhac and Halévy's L'Été de la St.-Martin** (François). Vocab. 25 cts.

**Voltaire's Zadig** (Babbitt). Vocabulary. 45 cts.

## Death's Modern Language Series.

### INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- Dumas' La Tulipe Noire.** With notes by Professor C. Fontaine, Central High School, Washington, D.C. 40 cts. With vocabulary, 50 cts.
- Eckmann - Chatrian's Waterloo.** Abridged and annotated by Professor O. B. Super of Dickinson College. 35 cts.
- About's Le Roi des Montagnes (Logie).** 40 cts. Vocabulary, 50 cts.
- Pailleron's Le Monde où l'on s'ennuie.** A comedy with notes by Professor Pendleton of Bethany College, W. Va. 30 cts.
- Seuvestre's Le Mari de Mme de Solange.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. 20 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes, Vol. I.** Short modern stories, selected and edited, with notes, by C. Fontaine, Director of French in the High Schools of Washington, D.C. 60 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes, Vol. II.** Short stories as above. 60 cts.
- Fleurs de France.** A collection of short and choice French stories of recent date with notes by C. Fontaine, Washington, D.C. 35 cts.
- Sandau's Mlle. de la Seiglière.** With introduction and notes by Professor Warren of Yale University. 30 cts.
- Seuvestre's Un Philosophe sous les Toits.** With notes by Professor Fraser of the University of Toronto. 50 cts. With vocab. 55 cts.
- Seuvestre's Les Confessions d'un Ouvrier.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. 30 cts.
- Augier's Le Gendre de M. Poirier.** One of the masterpieces of modern comedy. Edited by Professor B. W. Wells. 25 cts.
- Scribe's Bataille de Dames.** Edited by Professor B. W. Wells. 25 cts.
- Scribe's Le Verre d'eau.** Edited by Professor C. A. Eggert. 30 cts.
- Marimée's Colomba.** With notes by Professor J. A. Fontaine of Bryn Mawr College. 35 cts. With vocabulary, 45 cts.
- Marimée's Chronique du Règne de Charles IX.** With notes by Professor P. Desages, Cheltenham College, England. 25 cts.
- Musset's Pierre et Camille.** Edited by Professor O. B. Super. 20 cts.
- Jules Verne's Tour du Monde en quatre vingt jours.** Notes by Professor Edgren, University of Nebraska. 35 cts.
- Jules Verne's Vingt mille lieues sous la mer.** Notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, High School, Washington, D.C. 45 cts.
- Sand's La Mare au Diable (Sumichrast).** Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Sand's La Petite Fadette (Super).** Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- De Vigny's Le Cachet Rouge.** With notes by Professor Fortier of Tulane University. 20 cts.
- De Vigny's Le Canne de Jone.** Edited by Professor Spiers, with Introduction by Professor Cohn of Columbia University. 40 cts.
- Halévy's L'Abbé Constantin.** Edited with notes by Professor Thomas Logie. 30 cts. With vocabulary, 40 cts.
- Thier's Expédition de Bonaparte en Egypte.** With notes by Professor C. Fabregou, College of the City of New York. 25 cts.
- Gautier's Jettatura.** With introduction and notes by A. Schinz, Ph.D. of Bryn Mawr College. 30 cts.
- Gautier's Marie-Louise.** With notes. 25 cts.

